## RECURSIVE, SPECTRAL, AND SELF-GENERATING SEQUENCES

V. E. HOGGATT, JR.
San Jose State University, San Jose, CA 95192
and
A. P. HILLMAN
University of New Mexico, Albuquerque, NM 87131

Let $p$ be a fixed integer greater than 1 and define $u_{n}$ for all integers $n$ by

$$
u_{0}=0, u_{1}=1, u_{n+2}=p u_{n+1}+u_{n}
$$

Then $u_{1}, u_{2}, \ldots$ is an increasing sequence of integers with $u_{1}=1$ and hence a function $\sigma(n)$ is well defined for all $n$ in $N=\{0,1,2, \ldots\}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma(0)=0, \sigma(n)=u_{j+1}+\sigma\left(n-u_{j}\right) \text { for } u_{j} \leq n<u_{j+1} \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $s=\left(p+\sqrt{\left.p^{2}+4\right)} / 2\right.$ and $S_{n}=[n s]$, where $[x]$ denotes the greatest integer in $x$ 。

It is shown below that the spectral sequence $\left\{S_{n}\right\}$ and the shift function $\sigma(n)$ are related by the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{n}=u_{2}+\sigma(n-1) \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and that $\left\{S_{n}\right\}$ has the self-generating property that

$$
S_{n+1}-S_{n}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
p \text { if } n \text { is not in } A=\left\{S_{1}, S_{2}, S_{3}, \ldots\right\}  \tag{4}\\
p+1 \text { if } n \text { is in } A .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Also investigated are representations of positive integers in terms of $\left\{u_{n}\right\}$, partitions of $Z^{+}=\{1,2, \ldots\}$ into several sequences related to $\sigma(n)$ or $S_{n}$, the function counting the number of integers in $A \cap\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, and properties of "triangles" of entries $\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ k\end{array}\right]$ defined, for certain fixed $x$, by

$$
\left[\begin{array}{l}
n \\
k
\end{array}\right]=[n x]-[k x]-[(n-k) x] \text { for } k=0,1, \ldots, n .
$$

Most of the results presented here are analogous to those given in the authors' paper [4] in which the role of the present $u_{n}$ is played by $h_{n}$ satisfying

$$
h_{i}=2^{i-1} \text { for } 1 \leq i \leq d, h_{n+d}+h_{n}=h_{n+1}+\cdots+h_{n+d-1}
$$

The Fibonacci numbers $F_{n+1}$ are the case of the $h_{n}$ with $d=2$. The Fibonacci numbers could also be dealt with here by allowing $p$ to equal 1 ; then the sequence $u_{1}, u_{2}, \ldots$ must be replaced by $u_{2}, u_{3}, \ldots$ in defining $\sigma(n)$.

For a bibliography on spectra of numbers, see [3].

## 1. PROPERTIES OF $u_{n}$

Here we state the properties of the $u_{n}$ used below. Proofs are omitted since they are well known or easily derived, or both. Let $r_{n}=u_{n+1} / u_{n}$ for $n$ in $Z^{+}$.

Lemma 1:
(a) For every $k$ in $Z^{+}$, there is exactly one $j$ in $Z^{+}$with $u_{j} \leq k<u_{j+1}$.
(b) $r_{1}<r_{3}<r_{5}<\ldots<s<\cdots<r_{6}<r_{4}<r_{2}$.
(c) $u_{n+1}^{2}-u_{n} u_{n+2}=(-1)^{n}$ for all $n$ in $Z$.
(d) $r_{n}-r_{n+1}=(-1)^{n} /\left(u_{n} u_{n+1}\right)$ for $n$ in $Z^{+}$.
(e) gcd $\left(u_{n}, u_{n+1}\right)=1$ for all $n$ in 2 .
(f) $u_{2 n}=p\left(u_{2 n-1}+u_{2 n-3}+\cdots+u_{1}\right)$ for $n$ in $Z^{+}$.
(g) $u_{2 n-1}=p\left(u_{2 n-2}+u_{2 n-4}+\cdots+u_{2}\right)+u_{1}$ for $n$ in $Z^{+}$.

## 2. RATIONAL APPROXIMATION

Let $x$ be a positive irrational number. Then, we define a Farey quadru$p l e$ for $x$ to be an ordered quadruple ( $\alpha, b, c, d$ ) of positive integers, such that $b c-a d=1$ and $a / b<x<c / d$.

The following result slightly extends some material from the theory of Farey sequences. (See [5] for background.)
Lemma 2: Let $(\alpha, b, c, d)$ be a Farey quadruple for $x$ and let $k$ be a positive integer less than $b+d$. Then:
(a) There is no integer $h$ such that $a / b<\hbar / k<c / d$.
(b) $[k x]=[k a / b]$.
(c) If $d \nmid k,[k x]=[k c / d]$.
(d) If $k=d e$ with $e$ in $\{1,2, \ldots, b-1\},[k x]=[k c / d]-1$.

The proofs are left to the reader.
We note that parts (b) and (c) of Lemma 1 tell us that

$$
\left(u_{2 m+2}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m}\right) \text { and }\left(u_{2 m}, u_{2 m-1}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m}\right)
$$

are Farey quadruples for $s$ whenever $m$ is a positive integer. This is extended in the following result.
Lemma 3: Let $p \varepsilon\{2,3, \ldots\}, s=\left(p+\sqrt{\left.p^{2}+4\right)} / 2, u\right.$ be as in (1), and $m \varepsilon$ $\mathrm{Z}^{+}$. Then each of

$$
\begin{gathered}
(p, 1,1+k p, k) \text { for } k=1,2, \ldots, p ; \\
\left(u_{2 m}+k u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m-1}+k u_{2 m}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m}\right) \text { for } k=0,1, \ldots, p ; \\
\left(u_{2 m+2}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m+1}+k u_{2 m+2}, u_{2 m}+k u_{2 m+1}\right) \text { for } k=0,1, \ldots, p ;
\end{gathered}
$$

is a Farey quadruple for $s$.
Proof: Let ( $a, b, c, d$ ) represent one of these quadruples. The property

$$
b c-a d=1
$$

is easily verified using Lemma 1 (c). The property

$$
a / b<s<c / d
$$

can be shown using Lemma $1(b)$ and the fact that

$$
\frac{a}{b}<\frac{a+c}{b+d}<\frac{c}{d}
$$

whenever $b$ and $d$ are positive and $a / b<c / d$.

## 3. SPECTRA

Let $[x]$ denote the greatest integer in $x$, that is, the integer such that $[x] \leq x<[x]+1$. The sequence $[x],[2 x],[3 x], \ldots$ is called the spectrum
of $x$. It is a well-known result [1] that if $y$ is an irrational number greater than 1 and $(1 / x)+(1 / y)=1$ then the spectra $\{[n x]\}$ and $\{[n y]\}$ partition the positive integers $Z^{+}$.

Let $p$ be in $\{2,3,4, \ldots\}, s=\left(p+\sqrt{p^{2}+4}\right) / 2, x=s-p+1$, and $y=$ $s+1$. Also let $S_{n}=[n s], X_{n}=[n x]$, and $Y_{n}=[n y]$. It is easily seen that $y$ is irrational, $y>1$, and $(1 / x)+(1 / y)=1$; hence the spectra $\left\{X_{n}\right\}$ and $\left\{Y_{n}\right\}$ partition $Z^{+}$. It is also clear that $Y_{n}=X_{n}+n p$ and that each of $X_{n}$ and $Y_{n}$ is an increasing function of $n$. It follows that $\left\{X_{n}\right\}$ and $\left\{Y_{n}\right\}$ may be selfgenerated using the following algorithm.
$X_{1}=1, Y_{1}=1+p, X_{k}$ for $k>1$ is the smallest positive integer

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { not in the set }\left\{X_{1}, Y_{1}, X_{2}, Y_{2}, \ldots, X_{k-1}, Y_{k-1}\right\} \text {, and } Y_{k}=X_{k}+k p \text {. } \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $\left\{S_{n}\right\}$ is easily obtained from $S_{n}=Y_{n}-n=X_{n}+n(p-1)$. It is shown below that $\left\{S_{n}\right\}$ can be self-generated from the initial condition $S_{1}=p$ and the difference property (4) above.

The following result gives symmetry properties of finite segments [ $x$ ], ..., [ex] of a spectrum for the cases in which $e$ is the $b$ or $d$ of a Farey quadruple $(a, b, c, d)$ for $x$.
Lemma 4: Let $(\alpha, b, c, d)$ be a Farey quadruple for $x$. Then:
(a) $[b x]=[k x]+[(b-k) x]+1$ for $k=1,2, \ldots, b-1$;
(b) $[d x]=[k x]+[(d-k) x]$ for $k=0,1, \ldots, d$.

Proof of (a): We have $[b x]=a$ from Lemma 2(b). Let $0<k<b, j=b-k$, $h=[k x]$, and $i=[j x]$. Since $x$ is irrational, $h<k x$ and so $h / k<x$. This, $x<c / d, k<b$, and Lemma 2(a) imply that $h / k<a / b$. Similarly, $i / j<a / b$. Since $(h+i) /(k+j)$ is in the closed interval with endpoints $h / k$ and $i / j$, we have $(h+i) /(k+j)<a / b$. As $k+j=b$, this means that $h+i<a$ or $[k x]$ $+[j x]<[b x]$. Then the desired result follows from the fact that, for all real $y$ and $z$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
[y+z]-[y]-[z] \varepsilon\{0,1\} . \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof of (b): Lemma 2(d) tells us that $[d x]=c-1$. We only need consider the $k$ with $0<k<d$. Let $j=d-k,[k x]=h$, and $[j x]=i$. Then $h+1>k x$ and so $(h+1) / k>x$. This, $x>\alpha / b, k<\alpha$, and Lemma $2(a)$ then imply that $(h+1) / k>c / d . \quad$ Similarly, $(i+1) / j>c / d$, and hence $(h+1+i+1) /(k+$ $j)>c / d$. As $k+j=d$, one has $h+i+2>c$, which implies

$$
[k x]+[(d-k) x]+1>[d x]
$$

Again, the desired result follows from (6).

## 4. THE SHIFT PROPERTY

When convenient, $S_{n}=[n s]$ will also be denoted by $S(n)$. Also, we recall that $\sigma(n)$ is defined in (2) and $u_{j}$ is defined in (1).
Theorem 1: If $u_{j}<n<u_{j}+u_{j+1}$ and $j \varepsilon Z^{+}$, then $S(n)=u_{j+1}+S\left(n-u_{j}\right)$. Proo6: Let $(a, b, c, d)$ be the Farey quadruple $\left(u_{2 m}, u_{2 m-1}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m}\right)$ for s. Then Lemma 2 (b) tells us that $S(n)=[n s]=\left[n r_{2 m-1}\right]$ for $0<n<u_{2 m-1}+$
$u_{2 m} \cdot$ Hence
$(7) S(n)=\left[n u_{2 m} / u_{2 m-1}\right]=\left[\frac{u_{2 m-1} u_{2 m}+\left(n-u_{2 m-1}\right) u_{2 m}}{u_{2 m-1}}\right]=u_{2 m}+S\left(n-u_{2 m-1}\right)$
for $u_{2 m-1}<n<u_{2 m-1}+u_{2 m}$.

Next we use the Farey quadruple $\left(u_{2 m+2}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m+1}, u_{2 m}\right)$ for $s$ and we find, from Lemma 2(c) and (d), that

$$
\begin{gathered}
S(n)=\left[n r_{2 m}\right] \text { if } 0<n<u_{2 m}+u_{2 m+1} \text { and } u_{2 m} \nmid n, \\
S(n)=\left[n r_{2 m}\right]-1 \text { if } n=k u_{2 m} \text { with } k \text { in }\left\{1,2, \ldots, u_{2 m+1}-1\right\} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Using these facts, one can verify that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(n)=u_{2 m+1}+S\left(n-u_{2 m}\right) \text { for } u_{2 m}<n<u_{2 m}+u_{2 m+1} \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The desired result follows from (7) when $j$ is odd and from (8) when $j$ is even. Theorem 2: $S_{n}=u_{2}+\sigma(n-1)$ for $n$ in $Z^{+}$.
Proo f: Since $S_{1}=p=u_{2}$ and $\sigma(0)=0$, the result holds for $n=1$. Then a strong induction establishes it for all positive integers $n$ using the consequence

$$
S(n)=u_{j+1}+S\left(n-u_{j}\right) \text { for } u_{j}<n \leq u_{j+1}
$$

of Theorem 1 and the consequence

$$
\sigma(n-1)=u_{j+1}+\sigma\left(n-1-u_{j}\right) \text { for } u_{j}<n \leq u_{j+1}
$$

of the definition (2).

## 5. SEQUENCES OF COEFFICIENTS

Let $V$ be the set of all sequences $E=\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]$ with each $e_{i}$ in $\{0$, $1, \ldots, p\}$, with an $i_{0}$ such that $e_{i}=0$ for $i>i_{0}$, and with $e_{i}=p$ implying that both $i>1$ and $e_{i-1}=0$. For such $E$, the sum

$$
e_{1} u_{n+1}+e_{2} u_{n+2}+e_{3} u_{n+3}+\cdots
$$

is actually a finite sum which we denote by $E \cdot U_{n}$. Also, we let $E \cdot U$ stand for $E \cdot U_{0}$.
Lemma 4: If $E$ and $E^{\prime}$ are in $V$ and $E \cdot U=E^{\prime} \cdot U$, then $E=E^{\prime}$.
This is shown using parts (f) and (g) of Lemma 1.
Theorem 3: The sequences of $V$ form a sequence $E_{0}, E_{1}, E_{2}, \ldots$ such that

$$
E_{m} \cdot U=m .
$$

Proof: The only $E$ in $V$ with $E \cdot U=0$ is [0,0, ...], which we denote by $E_{0}$. Now we assume that $k>0$, and that there is a unique $E_{m}$ in $V$ with $E_{m} \cdot U=m$ for $m=0,1, \ldots, k-1$. By Lemma $1(a), u_{j} \leq k<u_{j+1}$ for some $j$ in $Z^{+}$. Let $h=k-u_{j}$; then we can let $\left[e_{h_{1}}, e_{h_{2}}, \ldots\right]$ be the unique $E_{h}$ in $V$ with $E_{h} \cdot U$ $=h$. Then let $e_{k j}=1+e_{h j}, e_{k i}=e_{h i}$ for $i \neq j$, and $E_{k}=\left[e_{k_{1}}, e_{k_{2}}, \ldots\right]$. Since

$$
k<u_{j+1}=p u_{j}+u_{j-1}<(p+1) u_{j},
$$

one sees that $e_{k j} \leq p$ and that if $e_{k j}=p$, then $j>1$ and $e_{k, j-1}=0$. Thus, $E_{k}$ is in V. Clearly,

$$
E_{k} \cdot U=E_{h} \cdot U+u_{j}=h+u_{j}=k
$$

Finally, there is no other $E$ in $V$ with $E \cdot U=k$ by Lemma 4.
The case with $p=2$ of Theorem 3 was shown in [2].

## 6. PARTITIONING $V$

We now partition $V$ into subsets $V_{1}, V_{2}, V_{3}$ and use these subsets to indicate the relationship of $E_{m+1}$ to $E_{m}$. Let $E \stackrel{3}{=}\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]$ be in $V$; then, $E$ is in $V_{1}$ if $e_{1}=p-1, E$ is in $V_{2}^{\prime}$ if $e_{1}=0$ and $e_{2}=p$, and $E$ is in $V_{3}$ if $e_{1}<p-1$ and $e_{2}<p$. Since $e_{1}>0$ implies $e_{2}<p$, one sees that each $E$ of $V$ is in one and only one of the $V$.
Lemma 5: Let $E_{m}=\left[e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots\right]$ and $E_{m+1}=\left[f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots\right]$. Then:
(a) If $E_{m}$ is in $V_{1}$, let $j$ be the smallest positive integer such that $e_{2 j+1}<p ;$ then $f_{i}=0$ for $i<2 j, f_{2 j}=1+e_{2 j}$, and $f_{i}=e_{i}$ for $i>2 j$.
(b) If $E_{m}$ is in $V_{2}$, let $h$ be the smallest positive integer such that $e_{2 h}<p$; then $f_{i}=0$ for $1 \leq i \leq 2 h-2, f_{2 h-1}=1+e_{2 h-1}$, and $f_{i}=e_{i}$ for $i \geq 2 h$.
(c) If $E_{m}$ is in $V_{3}, f_{1}=1+e_{1}$ and $f_{i}=e_{i}$ for $i>1$.

Proof: If we let $F=\left[f_{1}, f_{2}, \ldots\right]$ with the $f_{i}$ as in (a), (b), and (c), it is easily seen that $F$ is in $V$ and $F \cdot U=1+E_{m} \cdot U=1+m$. This and Theorem 3 establish the present result.
Lemma 6: Let $\Delta_{n}(m)=E_{m+1} \cdot U_{n}-E_{m} \cdot U_{n}$. Then:
(a) $\Delta_{n}(m)=u_{n}+u_{n+1}$ if $E_{m}$ is in $V_{1}$.
(b) $\Delta_{n}(m)=u_{n+1}$ if $E_{m}$ is in $V_{2}$ or $V_{3}$.

Proof: These statements are easily verified using the parts of Lemma 5.

## 7. POWERS OF $\sigma$

Let $E_{m}=\left[e_{m 1}, e_{m 2}, \ldots\right]$ and let $h$ be the largest $i$ with $e_{m i} \neq 0$, then one can use the definition of $\sigma$ in (2) to show that

$$
\sigma(m)=\sigma\left(e_{m 1} u_{1}+\cdots+e_{m h} u_{h}\right)=e_{m 1} u_{2}+\cdots+e_{m h} u_{h+1}=E_{m} \cdot U_{1} .
$$

Hence, there is no contradiction in defining $\sigma^{n}$ for all integers $n$ to be the function from $N$ to $Z$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma^{n}(m)=E_{m} \cdot U_{n}=e_{m 1} u_{n+1}+e_{m 2} u_{n+2}+\cdots . \tag{9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also let $a_{n}$ be the function from $Z^{+}$to $Z$ defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}(k)=u_{n+1}+\sigma^{n}(k-1) \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that $\alpha_{0}(k)=k$, that $\alpha_{1}(k)=S_{k}$, and that, for fixed $k$, the $\alpha_{n}(k)$ satisfy the same recurrence as the $u_{n}$, i.e.,

$$
a_{n+2}(k)=p a_{n+1}(k)+a_{n}(k)
$$

We also let $A_{n}$ be the image set of $\alpha_{n}$, i.e.,

$$
A_{n}=\left\{a_{n}(k): k \in Z^{+}\right\}
$$

Lemma 7: For $n$ in $\{1,2\}, A_{n}=\left\{i+1: E_{i} \varepsilon V_{n}\right\}$.
Proof: Using (10) and (9), one sees that

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{n}(m+1)=\left(1+e_{m 1}\right) u_{n+1}+e_{m 2} u_{n+2}+e_{m 3} u_{n+3}+\ldots \tag{11}
\end{equation*}
$$

As $m$ takes on all values in $N, F_{m}=\left[p-1, e_{m 1}, e_{m 2}, \ldots\right]$ ranges through all
the $E_{j}$ in $V_{1}$ and $G_{m}=\left[0, p, e_{m 1}, e_{m 2}, \ldots\right]$ ranges through all the $E_{h}$ in $V_{2}$. It follows from (11), Lemma 5, and the recursion in (1) that if $F_{m}=E_{j}$ then

$$
j+1=E_{j+1} \cdot U=\alpha_{1}(m+1)
$$

and, similarly, that if $G_{m}=E_{h}$ then

$$
h+1=E_{h+1} \cdot U=\alpha_{2}(m+1)
$$

These facts establish the lemma.

## 8. SELF-GENERATING SEQUENCES

Clearly, $a_{n}(1)=u_{n+1}$. This, and the following result, provide an easy self-generating rule for obtaining the sequence $\left\{\alpha_{1}(k)\right\}$ and a similar easy rule for using $\left\{\alpha_{1}(k)\right\}$ to obtain any $\left\{a_{n}(k)\right\}$.
Theorem 4: For $n$ in $Z$ and $j$ in $Z^{+}, a_{n}(j+1)-a_{n}(j)$ equals $u_{n}+u_{n+1}$ if $j$ is in $A_{1}=\left\{a_{1}(k): k \in \mathbb{Z}^{+}\right\}$and equals $u_{n+1}$ otherwise.

Proof: Lemma 7 tells us that $A_{1}=\left\{j: E_{j-1} \varepsilon V_{1}\right\}$. Also,

$$
a_{n}(j+1)-a_{n}(j)=\sigma^{n}(j)-\sigma^{n}(j-1)=E_{j} \cdot U_{n}-E_{j-1} \cdot U_{n}
$$

Hence, the desired result follows from Lemma 6.
Theorem 5: The number of integers in $A_{1} \cap\{1,2, \ldots, m\}$ is $a_{-1}(m+1)$.
Proof: Let $\Delta_{-1}(i)=a_{-1}(i+1)-a_{-1}(i)$. C1early,

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{-1}(m+1)=a_{-1}(1)+\Delta_{-1}(1)+\Delta_{-1}(2)+\cdots+\Delta_{-1}(m) \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now $a_{-1}(1)=u_{0}+\sigma^{-1}(0)=0+0=0$. Also, Theorem 4 tells us that $\Delta_{-1}(i)=$ $u_{0}=0$ when $i$ is not in $A_{1}$ and $\Delta_{-1}(i)=u_{0}+u_{-1}=1$ when $i$ is in $A_{1}$. Thus, the sum on the right side of (12) is the number of $i$ that are in both $\{1,2$, $\ldots, m\}$ and $A_{1}$, as desired.

## 9. PARTITIONING $Z^{+}$

We saw in Lemma 7 that $A_{n}=\left\{i+1: E_{i} \varepsilon V_{n}\right\}$ for $n$ in $\{1,2\}$. Let $B=$ $\left\{j+1: E_{j} \varepsilon V_{3}\right\}$. Since $V_{1}, V_{2}, V_{3}$ is a partitioning of $V=\left\{E_{0}, E_{1}, \ldots\right\}$, it follows that $A_{1}, A_{2}, B$ is a partitioning of $Z^{+}=\{1,2, \ldots\}$.

For $k=1,2, \ldots, p-1$, we let

$$
b_{k}(n)=\alpha_{1}(n)+k-p=k+\sigma(n-1)
$$

and 1 et

$$
B_{k}=\left\{b_{k}(n): n \in Z^{+}\right\} .
$$

It is easily seen that

$$
B_{k}=\left\{m: e_{m 1}=k, e_{m_{2}}<p\right\} \text { for } 1 \leq k<p
$$

and that $B_{1}, B_{2}, \ldots, B_{p-1}$ is a partitioning of $B$. Hence, the sequences

$$
\left\{b_{1}(n)\right\},\left\{b_{2}(n)\right\}, \ldots,\left\{b_{p-1}(n)\right\},\left\{\alpha_{1}(n)\right\},\left\{\alpha_{2}(n)\right\}
$$

partition the positive integers.

## 10. SPECTRUM TRIANGLES

Let $x$ be irrational and greater than 1 and let $\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ k\end{array}\right]$ denote $[n x]-[n k]-$ $[(n-k) x]$ for integers $n$ and $k$ with $0 \leq k \leq n$. It now follows from (6) that
$\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ k\end{array}\right]$ is always in $\{0,1\}$ ．The fact that $\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ 0\end{array}\right]=0=\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ n\end{array}\right]$ and the symmetry prop－ erty $\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ k\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{c}n \\ n-k\end{array}\right]$ are obvious．Part（c）of the following result implies other symmetries for certain finite subtriangles of the infinite triangle of values of $\left[\begin{array}{l}n \\ k\end{array}\right]$ ．
Theorem 6：Let（ $a, b, c, d$ ）be a Farey quadruple for $x$ ．Then：
（a）$\left[\begin{array}{l}b \\ k\end{array}\right]=1$ for $0<k<b$.
（b）$\left[\begin{array}{l}d \\ k\end{array}\right]=0$ for $0 \leq k \leq d$.
（c）$\left[\begin{array}{c}d-s+t \\ t\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{l}s \\ t\end{array}\right]$ for $0 \leq t \leq s \leq d$ ．
Proot：Parts（a）and（b）are a restatement of Lemma 4．For（c）we use Lem－ ma $4(\mathrm{~b})$ ，or the present part（b），to see that

$$
[d x]=[(s-t) x]+[(d-s+t) x]=[s x]+[(d-s) x]
$$

Hence $[(d-s+t) x]-[(d-s) x]=[s x]-[(s-t) x]$ ，and so

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[\begin{array}{c}
d-s+t \\
t
\end{array}\right] } & =[(d-s+t) x]-[t x]-[(d-s) x] \\
& =[s x]-[t x]-[(s-t) x]=\left[\begin{array}{l}
s \\
t
\end{array}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

as desired．

## REFERENCES

1．S．Beatty．＂Problem 3177．＂American Math．Monthly 33 （1926）：159，and （Solutions），ibid． 34 （1927）：159．
2．L．Carlitz，Richard Scoville，\＆Verner E．Hoggatt，Jr．＂Pellian Repre－ sentations．＂The Fibonacci Quarterly 10 （1972）：449－488．
3．Ronald L．Graham，Shen Lin，\＆Chio－Shih Lin．＂Spectra of Numbers．＂Math． Magazine 51（1978）：174－176．
4．V．E．Hoggatt，Jr．，\＆A．P．Hillman．＂Nearly Linear Functions．＂The Fibonacei Quarterly 17 （1979）：84－89．
5．Ivan Nivan \＆Herbert S．Zuckerman．An Introduction to the Theory of Numbers，pp．128－133．New York：John Wiley \＆Sons，Inc．， 1960.

# LOCAL PERMUTATION POLYNOMIALS OVER $Z_{p}$ 

GARY L. MULLEN
The Pennsylvania State University, Sharon, PA 16146

## 1. INTRODUCTION

If $p$ is a prime, let $Z_{p}$ denote the integers modulo $p$ and $Z_{P}^{*}$ the set of nonzero elements of $Z_{p}$. It is well known that every function from $Z_{p} \times Z_{p}$ into $Z_{p}$ can be represented as a polynomial of degree $<p$ in each variable. We say that a polynomial $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ with coefficients in $Z p$ is a local permutation polynomial over $Z_{p}$ if $f\left(x_{1}, \alpha\right)$ and $f\left(b, x_{2}\right)$ are permutations in $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$ for all $a$, $b \varepsilon Z p$.

In Section 2, we obtain a set of necessary and sufficient conditions on the coefficients of a polynomial $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ over $Z_{p}, p$ an odd prime, in order that $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ be a local permutation polynomial. Clearly the number of local permutation polynomials over $Z_{p}$ equals the number of Latin squares of order $p$. Thus, the number of Latin squares of order $p$ equals the number of sets of coefficients satisfying the set of conditions given in Section 2. Finally, in Section 3, we use our theory to show that there are twelve local permutation polynomials over $Z$ which are given by

$$
f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=a_{10} x_{1}+a_{01} x_{2}+a_{00}
$$

where $a_{10}=1$ or $2, a_{01}=1$ or 2 , and $a_{00}=0,1$, or 2 .

## 2. A NECESSARY AND SUFFICIENT CONDITION

Clearly, the only local permutation polynomials over $Z_{2}$ are $x_{1}+x_{2}$ and $x_{1}+x_{2}+1$ so that we may assume $p$ to be an odd prime. We will make use of the following well-known formula

$$
\sum_{m=1}^{p-1} j^{k}=\left\{\begin{array}{r}
0 \text { if } k \not \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)  \tag{2.1}\\
-1 \text { if } k \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)
\end{array}\right.
$$

Suppose

$$
f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\sum_{m=0}^{p-1} \sum_{n=0}^{p-1} a_{m n} x_{1}^{m} x_{2}^{n}
$$

is a local permutation polynomial. Let $f(i, j)=k_{i j}$ for $0 \leq i, j \leq p-1$. Since no permutation over $Z_{p}$ can have degree $p-1$, we have

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
a_{0, p-1} & =0,  \tag{C1}\\
\sum_{m=1}^{p-1} k^{m} \alpha_{m, p-1} & =0, k=1, \ldots, p-1 .
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Suppose $i=0$ so that

$$
f(0, j)=a_{00}+a_{01} j+\cdots+a_{0, p-1} j^{p-1}=k_{0 j}
$$

Let $k_{0 j}^{\prime}=k_{0 j}-k_{00}$ for $j=1, \ldots, p-1$. The set $\left\{k_{0 j}^{\prime}\right\}=Z_{p}^{*}$ and, moreover,

$$
\alpha_{01} j+a_{02} j^{2}+\cdots+\alpha_{0, p-1} j^{p-1}=k_{0 j}^{\prime} \text { for } j=1, \ldots, p-1
$$

Raising each of the $p-1$ equations to the $k$ th power, summing by columns and
using (2.1), we obtain

$$
\sum \frac{k!}{i_{01}!\ldots i_{0, p-1}!} a_{01}^{i_{01}} \ldots a_{0, p-1}^{i_{0, p-1}}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0 \text { if } k=2, \ldots, p-2  \tag{C2}\\
1 \text { if } k=p-1
\end{array}\right.
$$

where the sum is over all $(p-1)$-tuples $\left(i_{01}, \ldots, i_{0, p-1}\right)$ with
(a) $0 \leq i_{01}, \ldots, i_{0, p-1} \leq k$,
(b) $i_{01}+\cdots+i_{0, p-1}=k$,
(c) $i_{01}+2 i_{02}+\cdots+(p-1) i_{0, p-1} \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)$.

If $i>0$ is fixed, consider

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(i, j)-k_{i 0}^{"}=\sum_{m=0}^{p-1} \sum_{n=1}^{p-1} a_{m n} i^{m} j^{n}=k_{i j}^{\prime}, j=1, \ldots, p-1 \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

so that $\left\{k_{i j}^{\prime}\right\}=Z_{p}^{*}$. For each $k=2, \ldots, p-1$ raise each of the $p-1$ equations in (2.2) to the $k$ th power, sum by columns, and use (2.1) to obtain

$$
\sum \prod_{m=0}^{p-1 p-1} \prod_{n=1}^{k!a_{m n}^{i_{m n}} i^{\sum m}} \frac{i_{m n}!}{i_{m}}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0 \text { if } k=2, \ldots, p-2  \tag{C3}\\
1 \text { if } k=p-1
\end{array}\right.
$$

for each $i=1, \ldots, p-1$, where the sum is over all $\left(p^{2}-p\right)$-tuples

$$
\left(i_{01}, \ldots, i_{m n}, \ldots, i_{p-1, p-1}\right)
$$

which satisfy
(d) $0 \leq i_{m n} \leq k$,
(e) $\sum_{m=0}^{p-1} \sum_{n=1}^{p-1} i_{m n}=k$,
(f) $\sum_{m=0}^{p-1} i_{m 1}+2 \sum_{m=0}^{p-1} i_{m 2}+\cdots+(p-1) \sum_{m=0}^{p-1} i_{m, p-1} \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)$.

A further word of explanation about the sum in (C3) may be helpful at this time. Conditions (d) and (e) arise because of the multinomial coefficients, while (f) determines which terms appear in the given condition. Moreover, the $\Sigma m$ appearing in (C3) is understood to mean the sum, counting multiplicities, of all the first subscripts of the $\alpha_{m n}$ 's which appear in a given term. Finally, we note that condition (C3) actually involves a total of $(p-1)(p-2)$ conditions.

If we now fix $j$ and proceed as above, we obtain another set of necessary conditions. For brevity, we simply state these as
(C1')

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
a_{p-1,0} & =0 \\
\sum_{n=1}^{p-1} k^{n} a_{p-1, n} & =0, k=1, \ldots, p-1
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

When $j=0$, we have
(C2') $\quad \sum \frac{k!}{i_{10}!\ldots i_{p-1,0}!} a_{10}^{i_{10}} \ldots a_{p-1,0}^{i_{p-1,0}}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}0 \text { if } k=2, \ldots, p-2 \\ 1 \text { if } k=p-1\end{array}\right.$
where the sum is over all $(p-1)$-tuples $\left(i_{10}, \ldots, i_{p-1,0}\right)$ with

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { (a') } 0 \leq i_{10}, \cdots, i_{p-1,0} \leq k \\
& \left(\mathrm{~b}^{\prime}\right) i_{10}+\cdots+i_{p-1,0}=k \\
& \text { (c') } i_{10}+2 i_{20}+\cdots+(p-1) i_{p-1,0} \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)
\end{aligned}
$$

When $j=1, \ldots, p-1$, we obtain

$$
\sum \prod_{m=1}^{p-1} \prod_{n=0}^{p-1} \frac{k!a_{m n}^{i_{m n}} j^{\Sigma n}}{i_{m n}!}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
0 \text { if } k=2, \ldots, p-2 \\
1 \text { if } k=p-1
\end{array}\right.
$$

where the sum is over all $\left(p^{2}-p\right)$-tuples $\left(i_{10}, \ldots, i_{m n}, \ldots, i_{p-1, p-1}\right)$ that satisfy
(d') $0 \leq i_{m n} \leq k$,
( $e^{\prime}$ ) $\sum_{m=1}^{p-1} \sum_{n=0}^{p-1} i_{m n}=k$,
(f') $\sum_{m=0}^{p-1} i_{1 n}+2 \sum_{n=0}^{p-1} i_{2 n}+\cdots+(p-1) \sum_{n=0}^{p-1} i_{p-1, n} \equiv 0(\bmod p-1)$.
We now proceed to show that if the coefficients of a polynomial $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ satisfy the above conditions, then $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ is a local permutation polynomial. Suppose the coefficients of $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ satisfy (C1), (C2), (C3), (C1'), (C2'), and (C3'). For each fixed $i$, let $t_{i j}=f(i, j)-f(i, 0)$ for $j=1$, ..., $p$ - 1. The above conditions imply that for fixed $i=0,1, \ldots, p-1$ the $t_{i j}$ satisfy

$$
\sum_{j=1}^{p-1} t_{i j}^{k}=\left\{\begin{align*}
0 & \text { if } k=1, \ldots, p-2  \tag{2.3}\\
-1 & \text { if } k=p-1
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Let $V$ be the matrix

$$
V=\left[\begin{array}{lll}
1 & \cdots & 1 \\
t_{i 1} & \cdots & t_{i, p-1} \\
\vdots & & \vdots \\
t_{i 1}^{p-2} & \cdots & t_{i, p-1}^{p-2}
\end{array}\right]
$$

Using (2.3), we see that

$$
\operatorname{det}\left(V^{2}\right)=\operatorname{det}(V) \operatorname{det}(V)=\operatorname{det}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrr}
-1 & 0 & \ldots & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \cdots & 0 & -1 \\
0 & 0 & \ldots & -1 & 0 \\
\vdots & \vdots & & \vdots & \vdots \\
0 & -1 & \cdots & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right]= \pm 1 .
$$

Since $\operatorname{det}(V)$ is the Van der Monde determinant, we have, for fixed $i$,

$$
\operatorname{det}(V)=\prod_{j>k}\left(t_{i j}-t_{i k}\right) \neq 0
$$

so that the $t_{i j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, p-1$ are distinct. Hence,

$$
f(i, 0) \text { and } f(i, j)=t_{i j}+f(i, 0) \text { for } j=1, \ldots, p-1
$$

constitute all of $Z_{p}$.
A similar argument shows that if for each fixed $j$,

$$
s_{i j}=f(i, j)-f(0, j) \text { for } i=1, \ldots, p-1,
$$

then

$$
f(0, j) \text { and } f(i, j)=s_{i j}+f(0, j) \text { for } i=1, \ldots, p-1
$$

run through the elements of $Z_{p}$. Hence, we have
Theorem 1: If $f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ is a polynomial over $Z_{p}, p$ an odd prime, then $f$ is a local permutation polynomial over $Z_{p}$ if and only if the coefficients of $f$ satisfy (C1), (C2), (C3), (C1'), (C2'), and (C3').
Corollary 2: The number of Latin squares of order $p$ an odd prime equals the number of sets of coefficients $\left\{\alpha_{m n}\right\}$ satisfying the above conditions.

We note from condition (C1) that $a_{0, p-1}=a_{1, p-1}=\ldots=a_{p-1, p-1}=0$, since the determinant of the coefficient matrix in ( C 1$)$ is the Van der Monde determinant. Similarly, ( $\mathrm{C} 1^{\prime}$ ) implies that $a_{p-1,0}=\alpha_{p-1,1}=\ldots=a_{p-1, p-1}$ $=0$. We further note that we have a total of $2 p(p-1)$ conditions so that, in general, the conditions are not independent.

## 3. ILLUSTRATIONS

As a simple illustration of the above theory, we determine all local permutation polynomials over $Z_{3}$. If

$$
f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\sum_{m=0}^{2} \sum_{n=0}^{2} a_{m n} x_{1}^{m} x_{2}^{n}
$$

then the set of necessary and sufficient conditions becomes

$$
\begin{gather*}
a_{02}=a_{12}=a_{22}=a_{21}=a_{20}=0,  \tag{2.4}\\
a_{01}^{2}+a_{02}^{2}=a_{10}^{2}+a_{20}^{2}=1,  \tag{2.5}\\
a_{01}^{2}+a_{11}^{2}+2 a_{01} a_{11}=a_{10}^{2}+a_{11}^{2}+2 a_{10} a_{11}=1,  \tag{2.6}\\
a_{01}^{2}+a_{11}^{2}+a_{01} a_{11}=a_{10}^{2}+a_{11}^{2}+a_{10} a_{11}=1 . \tag{2.7}
\end{gather*}
$$

Using (2.4) and (2.5), we see that $a_{01}=1$ or 2 and $a_{10}=1$ or 2. From (2.6) and (2.7), we have $a_{11}=0$. Since $a_{00}$ is arbitrary, we see that there are a total of twelve local permutation polynomials over $Z_{3}$, given by

$$
f\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)=\alpha_{10} x_{1}+\alpha_{01} x_{2}+\alpha_{00},
$$

where $a_{10}=1$ or $2, a_{01}=1$ or 2 , and $a_{00}=0$, 1 , or 2 .

# generalized cyclotomic polynomials, fibonacci cyclotomic POLYNOMIALS, AND LUCAS CYCLOTOMIC POLYNOMIALS* 

CLARK KIMBERLING
University of Evansville, Evansville, IN 47702

## 1. INTRODUCTION AND MAIN THEOREM

In [6], Hoggatt and Long ask what polynomials in $I[x]$ are divisors of the Fibonacci polynomials, which are defined by the recursion

$$
F_{0}(x)=0, F_{1}(x)=1, F_{n}(x)=x F_{n-1}(x)+F_{n-2}(x) \text { for } n \geq 2
$$

In this paper, we answer this question in terms of cyclotomic polynomials. We prove that each Fibonacci polynomial $F_{n}(x)$, for $n \geq 2$, has one and only one irreducible factor which is not a factor of any $F_{k}(x)$ for any positive $k$ less than $n$. We call this irreducible factor the $n$th Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomial and denote it $F_{n}(x)$.

The method applied to $F_{n}^{\prime}$ 's to produce $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ 's applies naturally to the more general polynomials $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ which were introduced in [7] and are defined just below. Accordingly, in Section 2, we shall apply the method at this more general level rather than directly to the $F_{n}$ 's. The polynomials $C_{n}(x, y, z)$ so obtained from the $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ 's we call generalized cyclotomic polynomials. Special cases of the $C_{n}{ }^{\prime}$ s are the ordinary cyclotomic polynomials $C_{n}(x, 1,0)$, the Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ already mentioned, and a sequence

$$
\mathscr{L}_{n}(x)=C_{n}(x, 0,1)
$$

which we call the Lucas cyclotomic polynomials. Section 3 is devoted to the $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ 's and Section 4 to the $\mathscr{L}_{n}^{\prime}$ s. In Sections 3,4, and 5, we determine all the irreducible factors of the Fibonacci polynomials, the modified Lucas polynomials defined in [7] as $\ell_{n}(x, 0,1)$, and the Lucas polynomials.

In Section 6, we transform the generalized Fibonacci and Lucas polynomials into sequences $U_{n}(x, z)$ and $V_{n}(x, z)$ having the same divisibility properties as the $F_{n}$ 's and $L_{n}^{\prime} s$, respectively. The coefficients of these polynomials are all binomial coefficients, in accord with the identity

$$
z U_{n}(x, z)+V_{n}(x, z)=(x+z)^{n} .
$$

The polynomials $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ may be defined as follows:

$$
\ell_{n}(x, y, z)=\frac{L_{n}(x, z)-L_{n}(y, z)}{x-y} \text { for } n \geq 0 \text {, }
$$

[^0]where $L_{n}(x, z)$ is the $n$th generalized Lucas polynomial, defined by the recursion
$$
L_{0}(x, z)=2, L_{1}(x, z)=x, L_{n}(x, z)=x L_{n-1}(x, z)+z L_{n-2}(x, z) \text { for } n \geq 2
$$

The two special cases of particular interest are the generalized Fibonacci polynomials, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln _{n}\left(\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 z}}{2}, \frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 z}}{2}, 0\right) \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the generalized modified Lucas polynomials, namely $\ell_{n}(x, 0, z)$. Other special cases, to be treated briefly in Section 5, are the Chebyshev polynomials of the first and second kinds.

Following the method of Hoggatt and Bicknell in [5], we now determine the roots of the polynomials $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$. The first theorem is basic to all subsequent developments in this paper.
Theorem 1: For $n \geq 2$, the roots of $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ are
(2) $\quad 2 \sqrt{z} \sinh \left(\sinh ^{-1} y / 2 \sqrt{z}+2 k \pi i / n\right)$, where $k=1,2, \ldots, n-1$.

Proof: We have $(x-y) l_{n}(x, y, z)=t_{1}^{n}+t_{2}^{n}-\left(t_{3}^{n}+t_{4}^{n}\right)$, where $t_{1}=\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 z}}{2}, t_{2}=\frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 z}}{2}, t_{3}=\frac{y+\sqrt{y^{2}+4 z}}{2}, t_{4}=\frac{y-\sqrt{y^{2}+4 z}}{2}$.
Let $x=2 \sqrt{z} \sinh u$, so that $\sqrt{x^{2}+4 z}=2 \sqrt{z} \cosh u$, and

$$
t_{1}=\sqrt{z} e^{u} \quad \text { and } \quad t_{2}=-\sqrt{z} e^{-u} .
$$

Let $y=2 \sqrt{z} \sinh v$, so that $\sqrt{y^{2}+4 z}=2 \sqrt{z} \cosh v$, and

$$
t_{3}=\sqrt{2} e^{v} \text { and } t_{4}=-\sqrt{2} e^{-v}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
(x-y) l_{n}(x, y, z) & =z^{\frac{n}{2}}\left[e^{n u}+(-1)^{n} e^{-n u}\right]-z^{\frac{n}{2}}\left[e^{n v}+(-1)^{n} e^{-n v}\right] \\
& =\left\{\begin{array}{l}
2 z^{\frac{n}{2}}(\sinh n u-\sinh n v) \text { for odd } n \\
2 z^{\frac{n}{2}}(\cosh n u-\cosh n v) \text { for even } n .
\end{array}\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

Dividing by $x-y=2 \sqrt{z}(\sinh u-\sinh v)$, we find

$$
l_{n}(x, y, z)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
z^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \frac{\sinh n u-\sinh n v}{\sinh u-\sinh v} \text { for odd } n, \\
z^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \frac{\cosh n u-\cosh n v}{\sinh u-\sinh v} \text { for even } n .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Now suppose $n$ is odd. Then $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)=0$ when
$\sinh n u=\sinh n v$ and $\sinh u \neq \sinh v$;
i.e., when $n u=n v+2 k \pi i$ and $k$ is not an integral multiple of $n$. Thus,

$$
\ell_{n}(x, y, z)=0 \text { when } u=v+2 k \pi i / n \text { for } k=1 ; 2, \ldots, n-1
$$

For even $n$ we similarly reach the same result. Substitution for $u$ and $v$ now completes the proof.

## 2. GENERALIZED CYCLOTOMIC POLYNOMIALS

Following the treatment of cyclotomic polynomials in Nage11 [9, p. 158], for $n \geq 2$ let $p_{1}, p_{2}, \ldots, p_{r}$ be the distinct prime factors of $n$; let

$$
\Pi_{0}=\ell_{n},
$$

and for $1 \leq k \leq r$, let

$$
\Pi_{k}=\Pi l_{n / p_{i_{1}}} p_{i_{2}} \cdots p_{i_{k}}
$$

the product extending over all the $k$ indices $i_{j}$ which satisfy the conditions

$$
1 \leq i_{1}<i_{2}<\cdots<i_{k} \leq r .
$$

Lemma 2: Let $C_{1}(x, y, z)=1$, and for $n \geq 2$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n}(x, y, z)=\frac{\Pi_{0} \Pi_{2} \cdots}{\Pi_{1} \Pi_{3} \cdots} . \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The number of factors $l_{q}$ in the numerator equals the number of factors $\ell_{q}$ in the denominator.
Proof: First consider the number of $\ell q^{\prime}$ s in the numerator: for $0 \leq j \leq[r / 2]$ there are $\binom{r}{2 j}$ of the $\ell_{q}$ 's in $\Pi_{2 j}$, so that the number we seek is

$$
\sum_{j=0}^{[r / 2]}\binom{r}{2 j}
$$

Similarly, we count $\sum_{j=0}^{[(r-1) / 2]}\binom{r}{2 j+1}$ factors $\ell_{q}$ in the denominator. That these two sums are equal for any $r \geq 1$ follows from the identity

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{r}(-1)^{k}\binom{r}{k}=(1-1)^{r}=0
$$

Let us recall now some facts about cyclotomic polynomials (e.g., [9]): In case $\ell_{n}=x^{n}-1$, the quotient $C_{n}$ in (3) defines, for $n \geq 2$, the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial, which is irreducible over the ring of integers. (The first cyclotomic polynomial is defined to be $x-1$ ). Thus, for $n \geq 1$, the roots of the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial are the primitive $n$th roots of unity: $e^{2 k \pi i / n}$ where $(k, n)=1$. Writing $\phi(n)$ for Euler's phi-function, the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial therefore has degree $\phi(n)$.

Referring to (2), let us call the root

$$
2 \sqrt{z} \sinh \left(\sinh ^{-1} y / 2 \sqrt{z}+2 k \pi i / n\right)
$$

a primitive $n t h$ root of $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ if $(k, n)=1$.
Theorem 2: For $n \geq 2$, the quotient $C_{n}(x, y, z)$ in (3) is a polynomial with integer coefficients, having degree $\phi(n)$ in $x$. Moreover, for $n \geq 2, C_{n}(x$, 1,0 ) is the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial.

Proo 6: Suppose $n \geq 2$. By Lemma 2, if the quotient in (3) is formed with the polynomials $(x-1) \ell_{n}(x, 1,0)$ in the products $\Pi_{k}$ instead of $\ell_{n}(x, 1,0)$, then the result is $C_{n}(x, 1,0)$. But

$$
(x-1) \ell_{n}(x, 1,0)=x^{n}-1,
$$

so that $C_{n}(x, 1,0)$ is the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial, which has degree $\phi(n)$ in $x$.

It remains to be proved that $C_{n}(x, y, z)$ is a polynomial for $n \geq 2$; i.e., that the polynomial $D=\Pi_{1} \Pi_{3} \ldots$ divides the polynomial $N=\Pi_{0} \Pi_{2} \ldots$ over the ring of integers. Since this is the case for ( $x, 1,0$ ), each linear factor $x-r$ of $D$ is a factor of $N$ and must occur at least as many times in $N$ as in $D$. But each such $r$ is an $n$th root of unity, $r=e^{2 k \pi i / n}$ for some $k$ and $n$. So in the general case $(x, y, z)$, each linear factor $x-2 \sqrt{z} \sinh \left(\sinh ^{-1} y / 2 \sqrt{z}+\right.$ $2 k \pi i / n$ ) of $D$ occurs at least as many times in $N$ as in $D$. Thus, $D$ divides $N$. Since all the coefficients of $N$ and $D$ have only integer coefficients, the same must be true of the quotient $C_{n}(x, y, z)$, by the division algorithm for polynomials in $x$ over the ring $I[y, z]$ of bivariate polynomials with integer coefficients.
Theorem 3: For $n \geq 2$,

$$
C_{n}(x, y, z)=\prod_{\substack{k, n=1 \\ 0 \leq k \leq n}}\left[x-2 \sqrt{z} \sinh \left(\sinh ^{-1} y / 2 \sqrt{z}+2 k \pi i / n\right)\right]
$$

Proof: This is an obvious consequence of the one-to-one correspondence between roots of $C_{n}(x, y, z)$ and roots of the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial

$$
C_{n}(x, 1,0)=\prod_{\substack{(k, n)=1 \\ 0 \leq k \leq n}}\left(x-e^{2 k \pi i / n}\right)
$$

Theorem 4: For $n \geq 1$,

$$
\ell_{n}(x, y, z)=\prod_{\left.d\right|_{n}} C_{d}(x, y, z)
$$

Proof: First, $\ell_{1}(x, y, z)=C_{1}(x, y, z)=1$. Now suppose $n \geq 2$. Then

$$
C_{d}(x, y, z)=\left(x-r_{1}\right) \ldots\left(x-r_{\phi(d)}\right),
$$

where the $r_{i}$ 's range through the roots $2 \sqrt{z} \sinh \left(\sinh ^{-1} y / 2 \sqrt{z}+2 k \pi i / n\right)$ of $\ell_{d}(x, y, z)$ for which $(k, d)=1$. Each root of $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ is a primitive $d$ th root of one and only one $C_{d}(x, y, z)$ where $d \mid n$. Thus each linear factor of $\ell_{n}(x, y, z)$ occurs in one and only one $C_{d}(x, y, z)$.

Lemma 5: For $n \geq 1$, the polynomial $C_{n}(x, y, 0)$ is irreducible over the ring of integers.
Proof: The statement is clearly true for $n=1$. For $n \geq 2$, suppose

$$
C_{n}(x, y, 0)=d(x, y) q(x, y) .
$$

Then

$$
C_{n}(x, 1,0)=d(x, 1) q(x, 1) .
$$

Since the cyclotomic polynomial $C_{n}(x, 1,0)$ is irreducible, one of the polynomials $d(x, 1)$ and $q(x, 1)$ must be the constant 1 polynomial. Without any loss, we may suppose this one to be $d(x, 1)$ and thus have

$$
d(x, y)=1+(y-1) e(x, y)
$$

for some polynomial $e(x, y)$. Then

$$
C_{n}(x, y, 0)=q(x, y)+(y-1) e(x, y) q(x, y) .
$$

Now $q(x, y)$ includes the term $x^{\phi(n)}$, which cannot appear in

$$
(y-1) e(x, y) q(x, y)
$$

Therefore, $e(x, y)=0$, so that $d(x, y)=1$.
Theorem 5: For $n \geq 1$, the polynomial $C_{n}(x, y, z)$ is irreducible over the ring of integers.
Proof: Suppose
Then

$$
C_{n}(x, y, z)=d(x, y, z) q(x, y, z) .
$$

,$C_{n}(x, y, 0)=d(x, y, 0) q(x, y, 0)$.
By Lemma 5, one of the polynomials $d(x, y, 0)$ and $q(x, y, 0)$ is the constant 1 polynomial. Consequently, as in the proof of Lemma 5, we have

$$
a(x, y, z)=1+z e(x, y, z)
$$

for some polynomial $e(x, y, z)$. Then

$$
C_{n}(x, y, z)=q(x, y, z)+z e(x, y, z) q(x, y, z)
$$

Now $q(x, y, z)$ includes the term $x^{\phi(n)}$, which cannot appear in

$$
z e(x, y, z) q(x, y, z) .
$$

Therefore, $e(x, y, z)=0$, so that $d(x, y, z)=1$.
TABLE 1

$$
\begin{aligned}
\quad & \text { Generalized Cyclotomic Polynomials } C_{n}=C_{n}(x, y, z) \\
C_{1}= & 1 \\
C_{2}= & x+y \\
C_{3}= & x^{2}+x y+y^{2}+3 z \\
C_{4}= & x^{2}+y^{2}+4 z \\
C_{5}= & x^{4}+x^{3} y+x^{2} y^{2}+x y^{3}+y^{4}+5 z\left(x^{2}+x y+y^{2}\right)+5 z^{2} \\
C_{6}= & x^{2}-x y+y^{2}+3 z \\
C_{8}= & x^{4}+y^{4}+4 z\left(x^{2}+y^{2}\right)+4 z^{2} \\
C_{9}= & x^{6}+x^{3} y^{3}+y^{6}+3 z\left(2 x^{4}+x^{3} y+x y^{3}+2 y^{4}\right) \\
& \quad+9 z^{2}\left(x^{2}+x y+y^{2}\right)+3 z^{3} \\
C_{10}= & \left(x^{5}+y^{5}\right) /(x+y)+5 z\left(x^{3}+y^{3}\right) /(x+y)+5 z^{2} \\
C_{12}= & x^{4}-x^{2} y^{2}+y^{4}+2 z\left(x^{2}+y^{2}\right)+z^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Abbreviating $C_{n}(x, y, 0)$ as $c_{n}$, we note that

$$
C_{3}=c_{3}+3 z, C_{4}=c_{4}+4 z, C_{6}=c_{6}+3 z, C_{8}=c_{8}+4 z c_{4}+4 z^{2},
$$

and

$$
\begin{gathered}
C_{10}=c_{10}+5 z c_{6}+5 z^{2}, C_{12}=c_{12}+2 z c_{4}+z^{2}, \\
C_{9}=c_{9}+3 z\left(c_{5}+c_{12}\right)+9 z^{2} c_{3}+3 z^{3} .
\end{gathered}
$$

One wonders if all the coefficients of powers of $z$ are linear combinations of $c_{i}$ 's.

## 3. THE CASE $z=0$ : FIBONACCI CYCLOTOMIC POLYNOMIALS

Here we will determine the irreducible factors of the generalized Fibonacci polynomials. In Section 1, the (not generalized) irreducible factors were named the Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials and denoted $F_{n}(x)$. Here, however, we shall deal with the natural generalization: the generalized $F i-$ bonacci cyclotomic polynomials, denoted $\mathcal{F}_{n}(x, y)$. Theorem 6 will show that

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=C_{n}\left(\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, \frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, 0\right) \text { for } n \geq 1
$$

and Corollary 7 will show that the $\mathcal{F}_{n}(x)$ 's can be expressed as linear combinations of generalized (unmodified) Lucas polynomials.
Theorem 6: For $n \geq 1$, let $F_{n}(x, y)$ be the $n$th generalized Fibonacci polynomial. Then

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=\prod_{d \mid n} C_{d}\left(\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, \frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, 0\right)
$$

Moreover, the polynomials $C_{d}\left(\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, \frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}, 0\right)$, as polynomials in $x$ and $y$, are irreducible over the ring of integers.
Proo6: Write $s=\frac{x+\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2}$ and $t=\frac{x-\sqrt{x^{2}+4 y}}{2} . \quad$ By (1) and Theorem 4,

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=\ell_{n}(s, t, 0)=\prod_{\left.d\right|_{n}} C_{d}(s, t, 0)
$$

To see that the $C_{d}$ 's are irreducible as polynomials in $x$ and $y$, suppose

$$
C_{d}(s, t, 0)=p(x, y) q(x, y) .
$$

Then, since $x=s+t$ and $y=-s t$, we have $C_{d}(s, t, 0)$ written as a product of two polynomials each in $s$ and $t$. By Lemma 5, one of these polynomials is a constant polynomial, namely 1 , since $C_{d}$ is monic. Thus, either $p(x, y)=1$ or $q(x, y)=1$, as desired.
Theorem 7: For $k \geq 1$, let $L_{k}(x, y)$ be the $k$ th generalized (unmodified) Lucas polynomial. For $n \geq 3$, the $n$th generalized Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomial is given by

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=\sum_{j=0}^{\phi(n) / 2} \delta_{j} y^{\phi(n)}{ }^{j} L_{2 j}(x, y),
$$

where $\delta_{\phi(n) / 2}=1$ and the numers $\delta_{0}, \delta_{1}, \delta_{2}, \ldots, \frac{\delta_{\phi(n)}^{2}-1}{}$ are integers.

Proof: Suppose $n \geq 3$. With $s$ and $t$ as in the proof of Theorem 6,

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=C_{n}(s, t, 0)=t^{\phi(n)} C_{n}(s / t, 1,0),
$$

where

$$
C_{n}(u, 1,0)=u^{\phi(n)}+a_{\phi(n)-1} u^{\phi(n)-1}+\cdots+a_{1} u+1
$$

is the $n$th cyclotomic polynomial. Thus, $C_{n}(s, t, 0)$ has the form

$$
s^{\phi(n)}+\alpha_{\phi(n)-1} s^{\phi(n)-1} t+\cdots+a_{1} s t^{\phi(n)-1}+t^{\phi(n)} .
$$

Since $C_{n}(s, t, 0)$ is symmetric in $s$ and $t$, this polynomial is expressible as

$$
s^{\phi(n)}+t^{\phi(n)}+\alpha_{\phi(n)-1} s t\left(s^{\phi(n)-2}+t^{\phi(n)-2}\right)+\cdots+\alpha_{\frac{\phi(n)}{2}}(s t)^{\frac{\phi(n)}{2}} .
$$

Recalling $s t=-y$ and the Binet formula $L_{k}(x, y)=s^{k}+t^{k}$ [in particular, $\left.L_{0}(x, y)=2\right]$, we conclude that

$$
F_{n}(x, y)=L_{\phi(n)}-a_{\phi(n)-1} y L_{\phi(n)-2}+\cdots+\frac{(-1)^{\frac{\phi(n)}{2}}}{2} a_{\frac{\phi(n)}{2}} y^{\frac{\phi(n)}{2}} L_{0},
$$

as desired.
Corollary 7: Only for the purpose of facilitating the statement of this corrolary, suppose $L_{0}(x, y)=1$ (instead of 2). Then for $n \geq 1$, the $n$th Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomial $\mathcal{F}_{n}(x)$ is an integral linear combination of Lucas polynomials $L_{n}(x)$.
Proof: The proposition is easily verified for $n=0,1,2$. For $n \geq 3$, put $y=1$ in Theorem 7.

To illustrate Corollary 7, we write out, in Table 2, several Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials $\mathcal{F}_{n}=\mathcal{F}_{n}(x, 1)$ in terms of the Lucas polynomials $L_{n}=$ $L_{n}(x, 1)$. Recall that the $\mathscr{F}_{n}$ 's are the irreducible divisors of the Fibonacci polynomials, in accord with the identity

$$
F_{n}=\prod_{\left.d\right|_{n}} \Im_{d}
$$

TABLE 2
Fibonacci Cyclotomic Polynomials

$$
\begin{aligned}
\text { degree } 0: & \mathcal{F}_{1}=1 \\
\text { degree } 1: & \mathcal{F}_{2}=x=L_{1} \\
\text { degree } 2: & \mathcal{F}_{3}=x^{2}+1=L_{2}-1 \\
\mathcal{F}_{4} & =x^{2}+2=L_{2} \\
\mathcal{F}_{6} & =x^{2}+3=L_{2}+1 \\
\text { degree } 4: & \mathcal{F}_{5}=x^{4}+3 x^{2}+1=L_{4}-L_{2}+1 \\
\mathcal{F}_{8} & =x^{4}+4 x^{2}+2=L_{4} \\
\mathcal{F}_{10} & =x^{4}+5 x^{2}+5=L_{4}+L_{2}+1 \\
\mathcal{F}_{12} & =x^{4}+4 x^{2}+1=L_{4}-1
\end{aligned}
$$

TABLE 2 (continued)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { degree 6: } \mathscr{F}_{7}=x^{6}+5 x^{4}+6 x^{2}+1=L_{6}-L_{4}+L_{2}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{9}=x^{6}+6 x^{4}+9 x^{2}+1=L_{6}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{14}=x^{6}+7 x^{4}+14 x^{2}+7=L_{6}+L_{4}+L_{2}+1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{18}=x^{6}+6 x^{4}+9 x^{2}+4=L_{6}+1 \\
& \text { degree 8: } \mathscr{F}_{15}=x^{8}+9 x^{6}+26 x^{4}+24 x^{2}+1=L_{8}+L_{6}-L_{2}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{16}=x^{8}+8 x^{6}+20 x^{4}+16 x^{2}+2=L_{8} \\
& \mathscr{F}_{20}=x^{8}+8 x^{6}+19 x^{4}+12 x^{2}+1=L_{8}-L_{4}+1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{24}=x^{8}+8 x^{6}+20 x^{4}+16 x^{2}+1=L_{8}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{30}=x^{8}+7 x^{6}+14 x^{4}+8 x^{2}+1=L_{8}-L_{6}+L_{2}-1 \\
& \text { degree >8: } \mathscr{F}_{11}=L_{10}-L_{8}+L_{6}-L_{4}+L_{2}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{32}=L_{16} \\
& \mathscr{F}_{33}=L_{20}+L_{18}-L_{14}-L_{12}+L_{8}+L_{6}-L_{2}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{36}=L_{12}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{40}=L_{16}-L_{8}+1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{42}=L_{12}-L_{10}+L_{6}-L_{4}+1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{45}=L_{24}+L_{18}-L_{6}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{48}=L_{16}-1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{50}=L_{20}+L_{10}+1 \\
& \mathscr{F}_{105}=L_{48}-L_{46}+L_{44}+L_{38}-L_{36}+2 L_{34}-L_{32}+L_{30}+L_{24} \\
&-L_{22}+L_{20}-L_{18}+L_{16}-L_{14}-L_{8}-L_{4}-1
\end{aligned}
$$

Note in particular the coefficient of $L_{34}$ in the polynomial $\mathscr{F}_{105}$.
Two reminders (e.g., [9]) about the cyclotomic polynomials $C_{n}(u, 1,0)=$ $\Phi_{n}(u)$ which are helpful in computing $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ 's are the following:
(i) If $p$ is a prime and $p \nmid n$, then $\Phi_{n p}(u)=\Phi_{n}\left(u^{p}\right) / \Phi_{n}(u)$;
(ii) If $p$ is a prime and $p \mid n$, then $\Phi_{n p}(u)=\Phi_{n}\left(u^{p}\right)$.

As an example, we compute $\mathscr{F}_{45}$ as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Phi_{45}(u)=\Phi_{15}\left(u^{3}\right) & =\Phi_{3}\left(u^{15}\right) / \Phi_{3}\left(u^{3}\right)=\frac{u^{30}+u^{15}+1}{u^{6}+u^{3}+1} \\
& =u^{24}-u^{21}+u^{15}-u^{12}+u^{9}-u^{3}+1,
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathscr{F}_{45}(x, y) & =C_{45}(s, t, 0) \\
& =s^{24}-s^{21} t^{3}+s^{15} t^{9}-s^{12} t^{12}+s^{9} t^{15}-s^{3} t^{21}+t^{24} \\
& =s^{24}+t^{24}-(s t)^{3}\left(s^{18}+t^{18}\right)+(s t)^{9}\left(s^{6}+t^{6}\right)-(s t)^{12}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =L_{24}+y^{3} L_{18}-y^{9} L_{6}-y^{12} & & \text { (Theorem 7) } \\
F_{45}(x, 1) & =L_{24}+L_{18}-L_{6}-1 & & \text { (Corollary 7). }
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for highly composite values of $n$ the cyclotomic polynomials tend to be complicated ([1], [3], [4], [11], [12]), the same is true for the corresponding Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials.

In Theorem 12 of [6], Hoggatt and Long find an upper bound for the number $N(m)$ of polynomials of degree $2 m$ that divide some Fibonacci polynomial. If we restrict $N(m)$ to irreducible polynomials, then $N(m)$ is the number of solutions $n$ to the equation $\phi(n)=2 m$. For example, $N(720)=72$. That is, there are 72 distinct Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ having degree 1440 . See [10].

Still restricting $N(m)$ to irreducible polynomials, we ask if $N(m)=0$ for any $m$. The answer is yes. C. L. Klee proved in [8] that $\phi(n)=2 m$ has no solution $n$ if $m$ has no divisor $d>1$ for which $2 d+1$ is a prime. For example, no $F_{n}$ has degree 14 .

## 4. THE CASE $y=0$ : LUCAS CYCLOTOMIC POLYNOMIALS

Our main objective in this section is to determine the irreducible factors of the generalized modified Lucas polynomials $l_{n}(x, 0, z)$. First, however, we wish to justify the names Lucas cyclotomic polynomials and generalized Lucas cyclotomic polynomials for the sequences

$$
C_{n}(x, 0,1) \text { and } C_{n}(x, 0, z),
$$

since these sequences are determined by (3) from the generalized modified Lucas sequence $\ell_{n}(x, 0, z)$ and not the generalized Lucas sequence $L_{n}(x, z)$. The justification is this: that, by Theorem 1 , the quotient (3) defines polynomials analogous to cyclotomic polynomials in the former case, but does not generally define polynomials at all if the $L_{n}$ 's are substituted for the $\ell_{n}$ 's. (Nevertheless, the irreducible factors of the $L_{n}$ 's will be easily determined otherwise in Section 5.)

In Section 1, the (not generalized) Lucas analogue of the Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials were named Lucas cyclotomic polynomials and denoted by $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x)$. Here however, we shall deal with the natural generalization, the generalized Lucas cyclotomic polynomials, denoted $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ and defined by

$$
\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)=C_{n}(x, 0, z) .
$$

By Theorem 3 and the identity $\sinh i u=i \sin u$, the roots of $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ are

$$
2 i \sqrt{z} \sin 2 k \pi / n,(k, n)=1,1 \leq k \leq n-1
$$

The roots of $F_{n}(x, z)$ are $2 i \sqrt{z} \cos k \pi / n$ for $1 \leq k \leq n-1$, as proved in [5] and [6], and consequently, the roots of $\mathscr{F}_{n}(x, z)$ are

$$
2 i \sqrt{z} \cos k \pi / n,(k, n)=1,1 \leq k \leq n-1 .
$$

In order to reconcile roots of the $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ 's with those of the $\mathcal{F}_{n}(x, z)$ 's let

$$
Q_{n}=\{k:(k, n)=1 \text { and } 1 \leq k \leq n-1\} .
$$

for $k \varepsilon Q_{n}$, we have

$$
\sin 2 k \pi / n=\cos (n-4 k) \pi / 2 n .
$$

As $k$ ranges through the set $Q_{n}$, it is natural to expect the numbers $n-4 k$ to range through residue sets modulo various divisors or multiples of $n$. Such expectations are fulfilled in the next theorem.
Theorem 8: Except for $\mathscr{L}_{1}(x, z)=1$ and $\mathscr{L}_{4}(x, z)=x^{2}+4 z$, the $n$th genera1ized Lucas cyclotomic polynomial $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ can be expressed in terms of the generalized Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials as follows:

$$
\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)=\left\{\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F}_{2 n}(x, z) & \text { for odd } n, n \neq 1, \\
\mathcal{F}_{n}(x, z) & \text { for } n=2 q, q \text { odd } \\
\mathcal{F}_{q}^{2}(x, z) & \text { for } n=4 q, q \text { odd, } q \neq 1 \\
\mathcal{F}_{2^{t} q}^{2}(x, z) & \text { for } n=2^{t+1} q, q \text { odd }, t \geq 2
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

Proof:
Case 1. Suppose $n$ is odd and $n \neq 1$. Then

$$
\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\cos \frac{|n-4 k| \pi}{2 n} \text { for } 4 k<3 n \\
\cos \frac{(5 n-4 k) \pi}{2 n} \text { for } 4 k>3 n
\end{array}\right.
$$

Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A=\left\{|n-4 k|: k \in Q_{n} \text { and } 4 k<3 n\right\} \\
& B=\left\{5 n-4 k: k \in Q_{n} \text { and } 4 k>3 n\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
Q=A \cup B .
$$

It suffices to show that $Q=Q_{2 n}$ and that each element of $Q_{2 n}$ appears only once in forming the set $Q$. This will be shown in four steps:
(i) $A \cap B$ is empty;
(ii) $Q$ consists of $\phi(2 n)$ elements;
(iii) If $j \in Q$, then $1 \leq j \leq 2 n-1$;
(iv) If $j \in Q$, then $(j, 2 n)=1$.

To verify (i), suppose $n-4 k_{1}=5 n-4 k_{2}$ where $4 k_{1}<3 n$ and $4 k_{2}>3 n$. Then $k_{2}-k_{1}=n$, contrary to the inequalities

$$
1 \leq k_{1} \leq n-1 \quad \text { and } 1 \leq k_{2} \leq n-1
$$

If $\left|n-4 k_{1}\right|=4 k_{1}-n=5 n-4 k_{2}$, then $2\left(k_{1}+k_{2}\right)=3 n$, contrary to our assumption that $n$ is odd.

For (ii), we know from (i) that distinct $k^{\prime}$ 's in $Q_{n}$ provide distinct elements in $Q$. Furthermore, every element $k$ in $Q_{n}$ does yield an element of $A$ or $B$, since $4 k=3 n$ is impossible for odd $n$. Thus, $Q$ consists of the same number of elements as $Q_{n}$, which is $\phi(n)$. Since $n$ is odd, we have $\phi(n)=\phi(2 n)$.

To verify (iii), first suppose $4 k<3 n$. If $n-4 k \geq 0$, then $1<n-4 k$ since $n$ is an odd positive integer and, clearly, $n-4 k \leq 2 n-1$; if $n \overline{-} 4 k<0$, then, similarly, $1 \leq 4 k-n$, and $4 k-n \leq 2 n-1$ since $4 k<3 n$. Now suppose $4 k>3 n$. Then $5 n-4 k \leq 2 n-1$, and also $1 \leq 5 n-4 k$, since $k<n$.

For (iv), if $d|(n-4 k)|$ and $d \mid 2 n$, then $d$ must be odd since $n-4 k$ is odd. Consequently, $d \mid n$. But then $d \mid 4 k$, so that $d \mid k$. Since $(k, n)=1$, we conclude that $(n-4 k, 2 n)=1$. The same clearly holds for $4 k-n$ and $5 n-4 k$.

Case 2. Suppose $n=2 q, q$ odd. Then

$$
\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\cos \frac{|q-2 k| \pi}{n} \text { for } 2 k<3 q \\
\cos \frac{(5 q-2 k) \pi}{n} \text { for } 2 k>3 q
\end{array}\right.
$$

Here, the numbers $|q-2 k|$ and $5 q-2 k$, as stipulated, range through the set $Q_{n}$ as $k$ ranges through the set $Q_{n}$. The proof is so similar to that in Case 1 that we omit it here.

Case 3. Suppose $n=4 q, q$ odd, $q \neq 1$. Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A=\left\{k \varepsilon Q_{n}: k<q\right\}, B=\left\{k \varepsilon Q_{n}: q<k<2 q\right\}, \\
& C=\left\{k \varepsilon Q_{n}: 2 q<k<3 q\right\}, D=\left\{k \varepsilon Q_{n}: 3 q<k\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Each $k$ in $Q_{n}$ in odd, so that $(q-k) / 2$ is an integer, and

$$
\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}= \begin{cases}\cos \frac{|(q-k) / 2| \pi}{q} & \text { for } k \varepsilon A \cup B \\ \cos \frac{[(5 q-k) / 2] \pi}{q} & \text { for } k \in C \cup D\end{cases}
$$

We first claim that as $k$ ranges through the set $A \cup C$, the numbers $|(q-k) / 2|$ and $(5 q-k) / 2$, as stipulated, range through the set $Q_{q}$. This claim is verified as in the four steps in Case 1. Starting with

$$
A^{*}=\{|(q-k) / 2|: k \in A\} \text { and } C^{*}=\{(5 q-k) / 2: k \in C\}
$$

only step (ii) calls for anything new: To see that $A^{*} \cup C^{*}$ consists of $\phi(q)$ elements [granted from step (i) that distinct $k$ 's lead to distinct elements in $A \cup B \cup C \cup D]$, we note that the number of $k^{\prime} s$ in $Q_{n}$ is

$$
\phi(4 q)=\phi(4) \phi(q)=2 \phi(q),
$$

and precisely half of these lie in $A^{*} \cup C^{*}$ since, as is easily checked, the sets $A, B, C, D$ are in one-to-one correspondence with one another:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A \rightarrow B: k \rightarrow 2 q-k, \\
& A \rightarrow C: k \rightarrow 2 q+k, \\
& C \rightarrow D: k \rightarrow 6 q-k .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, the roots of $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ found for $k \in A \cup C$ are the roots of $\mathcal{F}_{q}(x, z)$. That the same is true for $k \in B \cup D$ will now be proved. Since

$$
B=\{2 q-k: k \in A\},
$$

we have

$$
\left\{\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}: k \in B\right\}=\left\{\cos \frac{|(q-k) / 2| \pi}{q}: k \in A\right\} .
$$

Since $D=\{6 q-k: k \in C\}$, we have

$$
\left\{\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}: k \in D\right\}=\left\{\cos \frac{[(5 q-k) / 2] \pi}{q}: k \in C\right\}
$$

Thus the roots of $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)$ for $k \in B \cup D$ are the roots of $\mathcal{F}_{q}(x, z)$. We conclude that $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)=\mathcal{F}_{q}^{2}(x, z)$.

Case 4. Suppose $n=2^{t+1} q, q$ odd, $t \geq 2$. Define sets $A, B, C, D$ as in Case $\overline{3, \text { and }}$ have the following one-to-one correspondences:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A \rightarrow B: k \rightarrow 2^{t} q-k \\
& A \rightarrow C: k \rightarrow 2^{t} q+k \\
& C \rightarrow D: k \rightarrow 3 \cdot 2^{t} q-k
\end{aligned}
$$

Now

$$
\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}= \begin{cases}\cos \frac{\left|2^{t-1} q-k\right| \pi}{2^{t} q} & \text { for } k \in A \cup B \\ \cos \frac{\left(5 \cdot 2^{t-1} q-k\right) \pi}{2^{t} q} & \text { for } k \in C \cup D\end{cases}
$$

We claim that as $k$ ranges through the set $A \cup C$, the numbers $\left|2^{t-1} q-k\right|$ and ( $5 \cdot 2^{t-1} q-k$ ), as stipulated, range through the set $Q_{2}{ }^{t}$. The four steps in Case 3 easily verify this claim. We omit the verification, except to note that for step (ii) we have $\phi\left(2^{t+1} q\right)=2 \phi\left(2^{t} q\right)$, so that $\phi\left(2^{t} q\right)$ roots are found for $k \in A \cup C$.

As in Case 3, we have

$$
\left\{\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}: k \in B \cup D\right\}=\left\{\cos \frac{(n-4 k) \pi}{2 n}: k \in A \cup C\right\}
$$

Therefore, $\mathscr{L}_{n}(x, z)=\mathcal{F}_{2^{t} q}^{2}$, and Theorem 8 is proved.
Theorem 8 and Theorem 4 enable us to factor the polynomials $\ell_{n}(x, 0, z)$ completely in terms of irreducible factors. For example,

$$
\begin{aligned}
l_{60}(x, 0, z) & =\prod_{d \mid 60} c_{d}(x, 0, z) \\
& =\prod_{d \mid 60} \mathscr{L}_{d}(x, z) \\
& =\mathscr{L}_{1} \mathscr{L}_{2} \mathscr{L}_{3} \mathscr{L}_{4} \mathscr{L}_{5} \mathscr{L}_{6} \mathscr{L}_{10} \mathscr{L}_{12} \mathscr{L}_{15} \mathscr{L}_{20} \mathscr{L}_{30} \mathscr{L}_{60} \\
& =x\left(x^{2}+4 z\right)\left(\mathscr{F}_{3} \mathscr{F}_{5} \Im_{6} \Im_{10} \mathscr{F}_{15} \Im_{30}\right)^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Recalling that $F_{30}=\mathcal{F}_{2} \mathcal{F}_{3} \mathcal{F}_{5} \mathcal{F}_{6} \mathcal{F}_{10} \mathcal{F}_{15} \mathcal{F}_{30}$, that $x l_{60}(x, 0, z)=L_{60}-2 z^{30}$, and that $x^{2}+4 z$ is the discriminant $D(x, z)$ of $t^{2}-x t-z$, we rewrite $L_{60}$ as follows:

$$
L_{60}(x, z)=D(x, z) F_{30}^{2}(x, z)+2 z^{30}
$$

Putting $x=z=1$, we find an identity $L_{60}=5 F_{30}^{2}+2$ involving the thirtieth Fibonacci number and the sixtieth Lucas number. These considerations lead to the following theorems and corollary.

Theorem 9a: Suppose $m=2^{t} q, q$ odd, $t \geq 2$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{2 m}(x, z)=\left(x^{2}+4 z\right) F_{m}^{2}(x, z)+2 z^{m} \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof: $\quad l_{2 m}=\mathscr{L}_{1} \mathscr{L}_{2} \mathscr{L}_{4} \ldots \mathscr{L}_{2^{t+1}} \mathscr{L}_{q} \mathscr{L}_{2 q} \mathscr{L}_{4 q} \ldots \mathscr{L}_{2^{t+1} q}$
$=x\left(x^{2}+4 z\right) F_{4}^{2} F_{8}^{2} \ldots \mathcal{F}_{2^{t}}^{2} \mathcal{F}_{2 q}^{2} \mathscr{F}_{q}^{2} \Im_{4 q}^{2} \mathscr{F}_{8 q}^{2} \ldots \mathcal{F}_{2^{t} q}^{2}$
$=x\left(x^{2}+4 z\right) F_{m}^{2} / x^{2}$,
and (4) follows immediately.
Theorem 9b: If $m$ is odd, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{2 m}(x, z)-2 z^{m}=L_{m}^{2}(x, z) \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proo f: The proof of this known identity is so similar to that of Theorem 9a that we omit it here.

Corollary 9: For $k>0$, let $F_{k}$ and $L_{k}$ be the $k$ th Fibonacci and Lucas numbers. If $m=2^{t} q, q$ odd, $t \geq 2$, then

$$
L_{2 m}=5 F_{m}^{2}+2 .
$$

If $m$ is odd, then

$$
L_{2 m}=L_{m}^{2}+2
$$

Proo 6: Put $x=z=1$ in (4) and (5).

## 5. THE IRREDUCIBLE FACTORS OF THE LUCAS POLYNOMIALS

Hoggatt and Bickne11 prove in [5] that for $n \geq 1$ the roots of the $n$th Lucas polynomial $L_{n}(x, 1)$ are

$$
2 i \cos \frac{(2 k+1) \pi}{2 n}, k=0,1, \ldots, n-1
$$

The methods of Section 4 could be used to compare these roots with those of the Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials. However, we choose a different way, which depends on the well-known identity $F_{2 n}=L_{n} F_{n}$.
Theorem 10: For $n \geq 1$, write $n=2^{t} q$, where $t \geq 0$ and $q$ is odd. The $n$th generalized Lucas polynomial $L_{n}(x, z)$ is a product of (irreducible) Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials:

Proo6:

$$
L_{n}(x, z)=\prod_{d \mid q} \mathscr{F}_{2^{t+1} d}(x, z)
$$

$$
L_{n}=\frac{F_{2 n}}{F_{n}}=\frac{\prod_{d \mid 2 n} \mathcal{F}_{d}}{\prod_{d \mid n} \mathcal{F}_{d}}=\prod_{\substack{d \mid 2 n \\ d \nmid n}} \mathcal{F}_{d} .
$$

Now

$$
\{d: d \mid 2 n \text { and } d \nmid n\}=\left\{2^{+1} d: d \mid n \text { and } d \text { is odd }\right\},
$$

so that the conditions $d \mid 2 n, d \nmid n$ are replaceable by the condition $2^{t+1} d \mid 2 n$, i.e., $d \mid q$.

Example:

$$
\begin{aligned}
L_{60} & =\frac{\mathcal{F}_{1} \mathcal{F}_{2} \mathcal{F}_{3} \mathcal{F}_{4} \mathcal{F}_{6} \mathcal{F}_{8} \mathcal{F}_{10} \mathcal{F}_{12} \mathcal{F}_{15} \mathcal{F}_{20} \mathcal{F}_{24} \mathcal{F}_{30} \mathscr{F}_{40} \mathcal{F}_{60} \mathcal{F}_{120} \mathcal{F}_{4} \mathcal{F}_{5} \mathcal{F}_{10} \mathcal{F}_{12} \mathcal{F}_{15} \mathcal{F}_{20} \mathcal{F}_{30} \mathcal{F}_{60}}{} \\
& =\mathcal{F}_{8} \mathcal{F}_{24} \mathcal{F}_{40} \mathcal{F}_{120} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Corollary 10: For even $n \geq 2, L_{n}(x, z)$ is irreducible if and only if $n=2^{k}$ for some $k \geq 1$.
Proo 6: Suppose $n=2^{k}$ for some $k \geq 1$. Then by Theorem 10 , we have $L_{n}=F_{2 n}$, which is irreducible by Theorem 6. If $n$ is even but not a power of 2 , then by Theorem $10, \mathcal{F}_{2 n}$ is a proper divisor of $L_{n}(x, z)$.

In [2], Bergum and Hoggatt prove Corollary 10 using Eisenstein's Criterion.

We conclude this section by noting that the divisibility properties that are already established for the polynomials $F_{n}, L_{n}$, and $\ell_{n}$ in terms of the irreducible polynomials $\mathcal{F}_{n}$ now carry over to divisibility properties of Chebyshev polynomials of the first and second kinds.

It is well known that the $n$th Chebyshev polynomial of the first kind is

$$
T_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{2} L_{n}(2 x,-1), n=0,1, \ldots
$$

Accordingly, the factorization of $T_{n}(x)$ in terms of factors which are irreducible over the ring of integers is given by Theorem 10.

Let us define modified Chebyshev polynomials of the first kind by

$$
t_{n}(x)= \begin{cases}\frac{1}{x} T_{n}(x) & \text { for odd } n \\ \frac{1}{x}\left[T_{n}(x)-(-1) \frac{n}{2}\right] & \text { for even } n>0\end{cases}
$$

Then we have $t_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{2} l_{n}(2 x, 0,-1)$, so that the divisibility properties of the $t_{n}$ 's are the same as those of the $\ell_{n}$ 's. In particular, the irreducible factors are given by Theorem 8. Moreover, many of the results proved in [7] [e.g., concerning greatest common divisors, $\left(\ell_{m}, \ell_{n}\right)=\ell_{(m, n)}$ ] carry over to similar results for the modified Chebyshev polynomials.

It is well known that the $n$th Chebyshev polynomial of the second kind is

$$
U_{n}(x)=F_{n+1}(2 x,-1), n=0,1, \ldots .
$$

Accordingly, the factorization of $U_{n}(x)$ in terms of irreducible factors is given by Theorem 6 .

Finally, note that the roots of the Chebyshev and modified Chebyshev polynomials, and also the roots of their irreducible factors, are easily obtained from Theorem 1 and Theorem 3.

## 6. TRANSFORMED FIBONACCI AND LUCAS POLYNOMIALS

For any integers (or indeterminants) $\alpha, b, c$, where $\alpha \neq 0 \neq c$, let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& U_{n}(x, z)=F_{n}\left(a x, b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right) \\
& V_{n}(x, z)=\frac{1}{2} L_{n}\left(a x, b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
W_{n}(x, z)=\ell_{n}\left(a x, 0, b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right)
$$

Then the quotients (3) are clearly polynomials for each of the sequences

$$
U_{n}(x, z) \text { and } W_{n}(x, z)
$$

since this is true for the sequences $F_{n}$ and $\ell_{n}$. Similarly, the divisibility properties of the $V_{n}^{\prime}$ 's follow from those of the $L_{n}^{\prime} s$, as given in [2] and Section 5.

One of the most attractive special cases is $(\alpha, b, c)=(2,-1,1)$. We tabulate the first few $U_{n}^{\prime} s$ and $V_{n}^{\prime}$ s in this case. Then we tabulate the first few $W_{n}^{\prime}$ s and the first few transformed Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomials; i.e., the quotients (3) formed from the $U_{n}$ 's. These, we shall show, are irreducible except for a constant multiple; hence, they are the irreducible factors not only of the $U_{n}$ 's, but also of the $V_{n}$ 's and the $W_{n}$ 's. After the tables, we shall return to arbitrary $a, b, c$ satisfying $a^{2}+4 b=0$ and find roots, Binet forms, etc.

TABLE 3
Transformed Generalized Fibonacci Polynomials $U_{n}=F_{n}\left(2 x, z^{2}-x^{2}\right)$
and Transformed Generalized Lucas Polynomials $V_{n}=\frac{1}{2} L_{n}\left(2 x, z^{2}-x^{2}\right)$

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
\frac{n}{1} & \frac{U_{n}}{1} & \frac{V_{n}}{x} \\
2 & 2 x & x^{2}+z^{2} \\
3 & 3 x^{2}+z^{2} & x^{3}+3 x z^{2} \\
4 & 4 x^{3}+4 x z^{2} & x^{4}+6 x^{2} z^{2}+z^{4} \\
5 & 5 x^{4}+10 x^{2} z^{2}+z^{4} & x^{5}+10 x^{3} z^{2}+5 x z^{4} \\
6 & 6 x^{5}+20 x^{3} z^{2}+6 x z^{4} & x^{6}+15 x^{4} z^{2}+15 x^{2} z^{4}+z^{6} \\
7 & 7 x^{6}+35 x^{4} z^{2}+21 x^{2} z^{4}+z^{6} & x^{7}+20 x^{5} z^{2}+35 x^{3} z^{4}+7 x z^{6}
\end{array}
$$

One immediately detects Pascal's triangle lurking within Table 3 . We shall soon ascertain that $z U_{n}+V_{n}=(\dot{x}+z)^{n}$ for $n \geq 1$.

TABLE 4
Transformed Generalized Modified Lucas Polynomials

$$
W_{n}=\ell_{n}\left(2 x, 0, z^{2}-x^{2}\right)
$$

$$
W_{1}=1
$$

$$
W_{2}^{1}=2 x
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& W_{2}=2 x \\
& W_{3}=x^{2}+3 z^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
W_{4}^{3}=8 x z^{2}
$$

$$
W_{5}=x^{4}+10 x^{2} z^{2}+5 z^{4}
$$

$$
W_{6}^{5}=2 x^{5}+12 x^{3} z^{2}+18 x z^{4}
$$

$$
W_{7}=x^{6}+21 x^{4} z^{2}+35 x^{2} z^{4}+7 z^{6}
$$

$$
W_{8}=32 x^{5} z^{2}+64 x^{3} z^{4}+32 x z^{6}
$$

TABLE 5
Transformed Generalized Fibonacci Cyclotomic Polynomials

$$
\begin{aligned}
& U_{n}=F_{n}\left(2 x, z^{2}-x^{2}\right) \\
U_{1} & =1 \\
u_{2} & =2 x \\
u_{3} & =3 x^{2}+z^{2} \\
u_{4} & =2 x^{2}+2 z^{2} \\
u_{5} & =5 x^{4}+10 x^{2} z^{2}+z^{4} \\
u_{6} & =x^{2}+3 z^{2} \\
u_{8} & =2 x^{4}+12 x^{2} z^{2}+2 z^{4} \\
u_{10} & =x^{4}+10 x^{2} z^{2}+5 z^{4} \\
u_{12} & =x^{4}+14 x^{2} z^{2}+z^{4}
\end{aligned}
$$

Lemma 11: Suppose $n$ is an odd positive integer $\geq 3$. Then

$$
\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}=2^{1-n}, \prod_{k=0}^{\frac{n-3}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{(2 k+1) \pi}{2 n}=n 2^{1-n}, \text { and } \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \sin ^{2} \frac{2 k \pi}{n}=n 2^{1-n}
$$

Suppose $n$ is an even positive integer $\geq 4$. Then

$$
\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}=n 2^{1-n} \text { and } \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}} \sin ^{2} \frac{2 k \pi}{n}=n^{2} 2^{-n} .
$$

Suppose $n$ is an even positive integer $\geq 2$. Then

$$
\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{(2 k+1) \pi}{2 n}=2^{1-n}
$$

Proof: For odd $n \geq 3$, we have
so that

$$
\prod_{k=1}^{n-1} 2 i \cos \frac{k \pi}{n}=F_{n}(0)=1,
$$

$$
2^{n-1} \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}=1
$$

For even $n \geq 4$, let $G_{n}(x)=\frac{1}{x} F_{n}(x)$. Then $G_{n}(0)=n / 2$, and

$$
\prod_{k=1}^{n-1}\left(x-2 i \cos \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)=x \prod_{\substack{1 \leq k \leq n n-1 \\ k \neq n / 2}}\left(x-2 i \cos \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)=x G_{n}(x)
$$

so that
and

$$
\begin{gathered}
\prod_{\substack{1 \leq k \leq n \\
k \neq n / 2}} 2 i \cos \frac{k \pi}{n}=G_{n}(0)=n / 2 \\
2^{n-2} \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}} \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}=n / 2
\end{gathered}
$$

Proofs of the other four formulas follow from similar considerations of $L_{n}(0)$ and $\ell_{n}(0,0,1)$.
Theorem 11: Suppose $a^{2}+4 b=0$. Then, for $n \geq 3$, the roots of the polynomials $U_{n}(x, z), V_{n}(x, z)$, and $W_{n}(x, z)$ are given by the following factorizations.

$$
U_{n}(x, z)= \begin{cases}\frac{n-1}{\prod_{k=1}^{2}}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) & \text { for odd } n \geq 3 \\ \frac{n a x}{2} \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) & \text { for even } n \geq 4\end{cases}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& V_{n}(x, z)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\frac{n a x}{2} \prod_{k=0}^{\frac{n-3}{2}\left[c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{(2 k+1) \pi}{2 n}\right]} \begin{array}{ll}
\frac{n-2}{2}\left[c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{(2 k+1) \pi}{2 n}\right] & \text { for odd } n \geq 3 \\
\prod_{k=0}\left[c z^{2}\right.
\end{array} \\
W_{n}(x, z)= \begin{cases}n \frac{n-1}{2}\left[c z^{2}-b x^{2} \cot ^{2} \frac{2 k \pi}{n}\right] & \text { for odd } n \geq 3 \\
\frac{n^{2} a x=1}{4} \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}\left[c z^{2}-b x^{2} \cot ^{2} \frac{2 k \pi}{n}\right]} & \text { for even } n \geq 4\end{cases}
\end{array} . \begin{array}{ll}
\end{array}\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof: $U_{n}(x, z)=F_{n}\left(a x, b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right)=\prod_{k=1}^{n-1}\left(a x-2 i \sqrt{b x^{2}+c z^{2}} \cos \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)$.
If $n$ is odd and $\geq 3$, then the $n-1$ roots of $U_{n}(x, z)$ occur in conjugate pairs, so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
U_{n}(x, z) & =\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}}\left[a^{2} x^{2}+4\left(b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right) \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right] \\
& =\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}}\left(-4 b x^{2} \sin ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}+4 c z^{2} \cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) \\
& =\prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-1}{2}} 4\left(\cos ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) \\
& \frac{n-1}{2}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

by Lemma 11.
If $n$ is even and $\geq 4$, then the $n-2$ roots of $U_{n}(x, z)$ remaining after the root 0 is excluded occur in conjugate pairs, and we find as above that

$$
U_{n}(x, z)=\frac{n a x}{2} \prod_{k=1}^{\frac{n-2}{2}}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right)
$$

With the help of Lemma 11 , the remaining four factorizations are proved in the same way.
Lemma 12: Suppose $a^{2}+4 b=0$. For $n \geq 3$, the transformed generalized Fibonacci cyclotomic polynomial $u_{n}(x, z)=\mathscr{F}_{n}\left(\alpha x, b x^{2}+c z^{2}\right)$ is given by

$$
u_{n}(x, z)=\left\{\begin{array}{c}
\prod_{\substack{1 \leq k \leq(n-1) / 2 \\
(k, n)=1}}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) \quad \text { for odd } n \geq 3 \\
\frac{n \alpha x}{2} \prod_{\substack{1 \leq k \leq(n-2) / 2 \\
(k, n)=1}}\left(c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}\right) \text { for even } n \geq 4
\end{array}\right.
$$

Proof: This is an obvious consequence of Theorem 11 and the fact that the roots of $\mathcal{F}_{n}(x, z)$ are

$$
2 i \sqrt{z} \cos \frac{k}{n},(k, n)=1,1 \leq k \leq n-1
$$

Theorem 12: Suppose $a, b, c$ are integers and $a^{2}+4 b=0$. Except for an integer multiple, for $n \geq 1$, the polynomial $u_{n}(x, z)$ is irreducible over the ring of integers.
Proof: The proposition is clearly true for $n=1$ and $n=2$. Suppose, for $n \geq 3$, that $u_{n}(x, z)=p(x, z) q(x, z)$. By Lemma 12 and the irreducibility (since $-b>0$ ) of the factors

$$
c z^{2}-b x^{2} \tan ^{2} \frac{k \pi}{n}
$$

over the real number field, $p(x, z)$ has the form $P\left(x, z^{2}\right)$ and $q(x, z)$ has the form $Q\left(x, z^{2}\right)$. Thus, putting $r=a x$ and $s=b x^{2}+c z^{2}$, we find

$$
\mathcal{F}_{n}(r, s)=P\left(\frac{r}{a}, \frac{a^{2} s-b r^{2}}{a^{2} c}\right) Q\left(\frac{r}{a}, \frac{a^{2} s-b r^{2}}{a^{2} c}\right) .
$$

Since $F_{n}(r, s)$ is irreducible, one of the polynomials $P$ and $Q$ must be constant. But then $p(x, z)$ or $q(x, z)$ is constant, as desired.
Theorem 13: Suppose $(a, b, c)=(2,-1,1)$. The Binet formulas for the polynomials $U_{n}, V_{n}$, and $W_{n}$ are as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& U_{n}(x, z)=\frac{(x+z)^{n}-(x-z)^{n}}{2 z} \\
& V_{n}(x, z)=\frac{(x+z)^{n}+(x-z)^{n}}{2} \\
& W_{n}(x, z)= \begin{cases}\frac{1}{x} V_{n}(x, z) & \text { for odd } n, \\
\frac{(x+z)^{n}+(x-z)^{n}-2\left(z^{2}-x^{2}\right)^{n / 2}}{2 x} & \text { for even } n\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof: Let $t_{1}=\frac{r+\sqrt{r^{2}+4 s}}{2}, t_{2}=\frac{r-\sqrt{r^{2}+4 s}}{2}, t_{3}=\sqrt{s}, t_{4}=-\sqrt{s}$. Putting $r=2 x$ and $s=z^{2}-x^{2}$, the desired formulas follow immediately from the Binet formulas

$$
\begin{aligned}
& F_{n}(r, s)=\frac{t_{1}^{n}-t_{2}^{n}}{t_{1}-t_{2}}, \\
& L_{n}(r, s)=t_{1}^{n}+t_{2}^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
l_{n}(r, 0, s)=\frac{t_{1}^{n}+t_{2}^{n}-t_{3}^{n}-t_{4}^{n}}{t_{1}+t_{2}-t_{3}-t_{4}} .
$$

## REFERENCES

1．Sister Marion Beiter．＂Magnitude of the Coefficients of the Cyclotomic Polynomial $F_{p q r}(x) . "$ American Math．Monthly 75 （1968）：370－372．
2．G．E．Bergum \＆V．E．Hoggatt，Jr．＂Irreducibility of Lucas and General－ ized Lucas Polynomials．＂The Fibonacci Quarterly 12 （1974）：95－100．
3．D．M．Bloom．＂On the Coefficients of the Cyclotomic Polynomials．＂Amer－ ican Math．Monthly 75 （1968）：372－377．
4．L．Carlitz．＂The Number of Terms in the Cyclotomic Polynomial $F_{p q}(x) . "$ American Math．Monthly 73 （1966）：979－981．
5．V．E．Hoggatt，Jr．\＆M．Bicknell．＂Roots of Fibonacci Polynomials．＂The Fibonacci Quarterly 11 （1973）：271－274．
6．V．E．Hoggatt，Jr．\＆C．T．Long．＇Divisibility Properties of Generalized Fibonacci Polynomials．＂The Fibonacci Quarterly 12 （1974）：113－120．
7．C．Kimberling．＂Divisibility Properties of Recurrent Sequences．＂The Fibonacci Quarterly 14 （1976）：369－376．
8．C．L．Klee．＂On the Equation $\phi(x)=2 m$ ．＂American Math．Monthly 53 （1946）：327．
9．T．Nage11．Introduction to Number Theory．New York：Chelsea， 1964.
10．K．W．Wegner \＆S．R．Savitzky．＂Solution of $\phi(x)=n$ ，Where $\phi$ Is Euler＇s ф－Function．＂American Math．Monthly 77 （1970）：287．
11．D．Zeitlin．＂On Coefficient Identities for Cyclotomic Polynomials $F_{p q}(x)$ ．＂ American Math．Monthly 75 （1968）：977－980．
12．D．Zeitlin．＂On Moment Identities for the Coefficients of Cyclotomic Polynomials of Order $p_{1} p_{2} \ldots p_{n} . "$ Notices of A．M．S． 16 （1969）：1081．
＊米北落

GEOMETRIC RECURRENCE RELATION

LEONARD E．FULLER<br>Kansas State University，Manhattan KA 66502

## 1．INTRODUCTION

In a previous paper［1］，we considered $r, s$ sequences $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ and obtained explicit formulations for the general term in powers of $r$ and $s$ ．We noted 2 special sequences $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$ and $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$ ．These are sequences that specialize to the Fibonacci and Lucas sequences where $r=s=1$ ．

In this paper，we propose to consider the relationship between $r, s$ re－ currence relations and geometric sequences．We give a necessary and suffi－ cient condition on $r$ and $s$ for the recurrence relation to be geometric．We conclude the section by showing how to write any geometric sequence as an $r$ ， $s$ recurrence relation．

In the final section，we briefly consider a special Fibonacci sequence． We give an explicit formulation for its general term．We are then able to note when it is a geometric sequence．

## 2. GEOMETRIC $r$, $s$ SEQUENCES

In the previous paper [1] we considered the special $r, s$ relations $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$ and $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$ which were characterized by the initial values $G_{0}=0, G_{1}=1, M_{0}=$ 2 , and $M_{1}=r$. We further specialize $r$ and $s$ so that the characteristic equation of the sequence has a multiple root $\lambda$. We then have $r=2 \lambda$ and $s=-\lambda^{2}$. It can be readily verified that the expression for the general terms are

$$
G_{k}=k \lambda^{k-1} \quad \text { and } \quad M_{k}=2 \lambda^{k}
$$

Note that the $M_{k}$ sequence is geometric with ratio of $\lambda$ and first term of $M_{0}=2$. But the other sequence is not geometric. We shall develop the general conditions for which these two results are special cases.

Before going to the main theorem, we will make a few observations. Consider the general term of the $r, s$ sequence $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ :

$$
U_{n}=r U_{n-1}+s U_{n-2} ; U_{0}, U_{1} \text { arbitrary. }
$$

If $s=0$, this would be a geometric sequence starting with $U_{1}$. Further, if the initial values were such that $U_{1}=r U_{0}$, the sequence would be geometric with $U_{0}$ as the first term.

If $r=0$, we have two geometric sequences with ratio $s$. One of these is the even indexed $U_{k}$ with $U_{0}$ as initial value. The other geometric sequence is the odd indexed $U_{k}$ with $U_{1}$ as starting value.

We shall call these two cases the trivial cases. In other words, an $r$, $s$ relation for which $r s=0$ is trivially geometric.

There is a whole class of $r, s$ sequences that are geometric only in this trivial case. These are the sequences, for which $U_{0}=0$, for in this case

$$
\begin{aligned}
& U_{2}=r U_{1}+s U_{0}=r U_{1}, \\
& U_{3}=r U_{2}+s U_{1}=\left(r^{2}+s\right) U_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now this is geometric only if $r^{2}+s=r^{2}$. But this can only happen for $s=0$. Included in this class is the $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$ sequence.

We shall assume in the rest of this section that $U_{0}, r$, and $s$ are all nonzero. We are ready to state and prove our theorem.

Theorem 2.1: The $r, s$ sequence $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ is geometric if and on1y if

$$
\frac{r+e}{2}=\frac{U_{1}}{U_{0}}, \text { where } e= \pm \sqrt{r^{2}+4 s}
$$

For convenience, we shall denote the ratio as $m$ so that $r+e=2 m$ or $r=2 m-e$. We find that

$$
s=\frac{e^{2}-r^{2}}{4}=\frac{e^{2}-(2 m-e)^{2}}{4}=m(e-m)
$$

We also need the result that

$$
r m+s=2 m^{2}-m e+m e-m^{2}=m^{2}
$$

From the expression for $U_{2}$ and the assumption that $U_{1}=m U_{0}$, we have

$$
U_{2}=r U_{1}+s U_{0}=r\left(m U_{0}\right)+s U_{0}=(r m+s) U_{0}=m^{2} U_{0}=m U_{1}
$$

Assume that $U_{k}=m U_{k-1}$ for $k=2, \ldots, i-1$. For

$$
U_{i}=r U_{i-1}+s U_{i-2}=r\left(m U_{i-2}\right)+s U_{i-2}=(r m+s) U_{i-2}=m^{2} U_{i-2}=m U_{i-1}
$$

Hence, the sequence is geometric with $U_{0}$ as first term and ratio of $m$.
Conversely, assume $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ is geometric with ratio $m$ so that $U_{k}=m U_{k-1}$ for all $k$. Since

$$
U_{k}=r U_{k-1}+s U_{k-2}=(r m+s) U_{k-2},
$$

and, by assumption,

$$
U_{k}=m U_{k-1}=m\left(m U_{k-2}\right)=m^{2} U_{k-2}
$$

it follows that $r m+s=m^{2}$. This means that $m$ is a solution of the equation $x^{2}-r x-s=0$. The roots of this equation are $\frac{r \pm e}{2}$, so $m=\frac{r+e}{2}$. Further, $U_{1}=m U_{0}$ so $\frac{U_{1}}{U_{0}}=m$. But these are the given equivalent conditions.

In the proof, it was not necessary that $r$ and $s$ be integers. The results are then valid for a more general recurrence relation. In the corollary that follows, we note how any geometric sequence can be expressed as an $r, s$ relation.
Corollary 2.1: The geometric sequence $U_{k}=a t^{k}$ can be represented as the $r$, $s$ sequence with $U_{0}=a, U_{1}=a t, r=2 t-\lambda, s=t \lambda-t^{2}$ for any $\lambda$.

By the choice of $U_{0}$ and. $U_{1}$, we have $U_{1}=t U_{0}$. Also,

$$
e^{2}=r^{2}+4 s=4 t^{2}-4 t \lambda+\lambda^{2}+4 t \lambda-4 t^{2}=\lambda^{2},
$$

so that

$$
\frac{r+e}{2}=\frac{2 t-\lambda+\lambda}{2}=t
$$

Hence, by the theorem, this $r, s$ sequence is geometric.

## 3. A SPECIAL TRIBONACCI SEQUENCE

There is a special Tribonacci sequence that is geometric under some conditions. It can be verified that the sequence

$$
T_{n}=r T_{n-1}+s T_{n-2}-r s T_{n-3} ; T_{0}, T_{1}, T_{2} \text { arbitrary }
$$

has for a solution

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T_{2 k+2}=\sum_{j=0}^{k} r^{2 k-2 j} s^{j}\left(T_{2}-s T_{0}\right)+s^{k+1} T_{0} \\
& T_{2 k+3}=\sum_{j=0}^{k} r^{2 k+1-2 j} s^{j}\left(T_{2}-s T_{0}\right)+s^{k+1} T_{1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The roots of the characteristic equation of the sequence are $r, \pm \sqrt{s}$. In case $T_{2}-s T_{0}=0$, we see that the even-indexed terms form a geometric sequence with ratio $s$ and initial value $T_{0}$. Note that the condition imposed has $T_{2}=$ $s T_{0}$. The odd-indexed terms also form a geometric sequence with ratio $s$ and initial value $T_{1}$.

We have another important special case to be noted. If $T_{0}=T_{1}=0$, we do not need to differentiate between even- and odd-indexed terms. We have for solution

$$
T_{m}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{m-2}{2}\right]} r^{m-2-2 j} s^{j} T_{2}
$$

if $T_{2}=1$, we have represented the restricted partitions of $m-2$ as a sum of ( $m-2-2 j$ ) 1's and (j) 2's.

## REFERENCE

1．L．E．Fuller．＂Representations for $r, s$ Recurrence Relations．＂Below．

REPRESENTATIONS FOR $r$ s $s$ RECURRENCE RELATIONS
LEONARD E．FULLER
Kansas State University，Manhattan KA 66502
1．STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM
Recently，Buschman［1］，Horadam［2］，and Waddill［3］considered proper－ ties of the recurrence relation

$$
U_{k}=r U_{k-1}+s U_{k-2}
$$

where $r, s$ are nonnegative integers．Buschman and Horadam gave representa－ tions for $U_{k}$ in powers of $r$ and $e=\left(r^{2}+4 s\right)^{1 / 2}$ ．In this paper we give them in powers of $r$ and $s$ ．We write the $K_{n}$ of Waddill as $G_{k}$ ．It is a generaliza－ tion of the Fibonacci sequence．We also consider a sequence $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$ that is a generalization of the Lucas sequence．

For the $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$ and $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$ sequences，we obtain two representations for their general terms．From this，we move to a representation for the general term of the basic sequence．A computer program has been written that gives this term for specified values of the parameters．

In this paper we use some standard notation．We start by defining

$$
e^{2}=r^{2}+4 s,
$$

where $e$ could be irrational．We also need to define

$$
\alpha=(r+e) / 2 \text { and } \beta=(r-e) / 2 .
$$

In other words，$\alpha$ and $\beta$ are solutions of the quadratic equation

$$
x^{2}-r x-s=0
$$

We can easily show that $\alpha+\beta=r, \alpha-\beta=e$ ，and $\alpha \beta=-s$ ．

## 2．GENERALIZATIONS OF THE FIBONACCI AND LUCAS SEQUENCES

Using the $\alpha$ and $\beta$ given in the first section，we can define two special $r, s$ sequences．These are given by

$$
G_{k}=\frac{\alpha^{k}-\beta^{k}}{e}(e \neq 0), \quad M_{k}=\alpha^{k}+\beta^{k}
$$

It is easy to verify that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& G_{0}=0, G_{1}=1, G_{2}=r, G_{3}=r^{2}+s, G_{4}=r^{3}+2 r s ; \\
& M_{0}=2, M_{1}=r, M_{2}=r^{2}+2 s, M_{3}=r^{3}+3 r s, \\
& M_{4}=r^{4}+4 r^{2} s+2 s^{2} ;
\end{aligned}
$$

and that they satisfy the basic $r, s$ recurrence relation；i．e．，

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
G_{2}=r G_{1}+s G_{0} & M_{2}=r M_{1}+s M_{0} \\
G_{3}=r G_{2}+s G_{1} & M_{3}=r M_{2}+s M_{1} \\
G_{4}=r G_{3}+s G_{2} & M_{4}=r M_{3}+s M_{2}
\end{array}
$$

In the next theorem, we prove that these two sequences are indeed $r, s$ sequences.
Theorem 1: The sequences $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$ and $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$ are $r, s$ sequences.
The proofs for both utilize mathematical induction. We have already indicated the validity of the theorem for $k=2,3$, and 4. We assume the terms satisfy the $r, s$ relation for $k=2,3, \ldots, i-1$. We form

$$
\begin{aligned}
r G_{i-1}+s G_{i-2} & =(\alpha+\beta) \frac{\alpha^{i-1}-\beta^{i-1}}{e}+(-\alpha \beta) \frac{\alpha^{i-2}-\beta^{i-2}}{e} \\
& =\frac{\alpha^{i}-\beta^{i}+\alpha^{i-1} \beta-\alpha \beta^{i-1}-\alpha^{i-1} \beta+\alpha \beta^{i-1}}{e} \\
& =\frac{\alpha^{i}-\beta^{i}}{e}
\end{aligned}
$$

This is $G_{i}$ by definition, so this sequence is an $r$,s sequence.
For the second part, we once more assume that the terms satisfy the $r, s$ relation for $k=2$, ..., $i$ - 1 . We form this time

$$
\begin{aligned}
r M_{i-1}+s M_{i-2} & =(\alpha+\beta)\left(\alpha^{i-1}+\beta^{i-1}\right)+(-\alpha \beta)\left(\alpha^{i-2}+\beta^{i-2}\right) \\
& =\alpha^{i}+\beta^{i}+\alpha^{i-1} \beta+\alpha \beta^{i-1}-\alpha^{i-1} \beta-\alpha \beta^{i-1} \\
& =\alpha^{i}+\beta^{i} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This is $M$ by definition, so this too is an $r, s$ sequence.
We obtain the Fibonacci and Lucas sequences from these two by letting $r=s=1$. This can be readily verified.

In the next two theorems we give a more explicit formulation for $G_{k}$ and $M_{k}$ that can be easily programmed for a computer.
Theorem 2: For the sequence $\left\{G_{k}\right\}$,

$$
G_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k-1}{2}\right]}(k-1-j) r^{k-1-2 j} s^{j}, k>0 ; G_{0}=0 .
$$

We shall prove this by induction. We first note that this formulation for $k=1,2,3,4$ gives the same results as the previous one.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& G_{1}=\binom{0}{0} r^{0} s^{0}=1 \\
& G_{2}=\binom{1}{0} r=r \\
& G_{3}=\binom{2}{0} r^{2}+\binom{1}{1} s=r^{2}+s \\
& G_{4}=\binom{3}{0} r^{3}+\binom{2}{1} r s=r^{3}+2 r s
\end{aligned}
$$

We assume that the result is valid for $k=1$, ..., $i-1$. We now show that $r G_{i-1}+s G_{i-2}$ does give the expression for $G_{i}$. Consider then

$$
\begin{aligned}
r G_{i-1}+s G_{i-2} & =r \sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-2}{2}\right]}\binom{i-2-j}{j} r^{i-2-2 j} s^{j}+s \sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-3}{2}\right]}\binom{i-3-j}{j} r^{i-3-2 j} s^{j} \\
& =\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-2}{2}\right]}\binom{i-2-j}{j} r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j}+\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-3}{2}\right]}\binom{i-3-j}{j} r^{i-3-2 j} s^{j+1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We now introduce a standard change that we use in several proofs. We first remove the first term of the first summation; then we shift the index of the second summation by replacing $j$ by $j-1$. This gives the same exponents for $r$ and $s$ in both summations. We then have

$$
r^{i-1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-2}{2}\right]}\binom{i-2-j}{j} r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-1}{2}\right]}\binom{i-2-j}{j-1} r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j}
$$

If $i$ is even, the upper limits of both summations are equal, so we can combine them into the single summation:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.p^{i-1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-1}{2}\right]}(i-2-j)+\binom{i-2-j}{j-1}\right] r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j} \\
& =r^{i-1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-1]}{2}\right]}\binom{i-j-j}{j} r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We see that the summand is $r^{i-1}$ for $j=0$. We include that term in the summation and obtain the desired expression for $G_{i}$.

If $i$ is odd, then the upper limit on the second summation is one larger than that on the first. We break off the last term on the second summation and combine the two summands. This gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.r^{i-1}+\sum^{\left[\frac{i-3}{2}\right]}\binom{i-2-j}{j}+\binom{i-2-j}{i-1}\right] r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j}+s^{(i-1) / 2} \\
= & r^{i-1}+\sum^{\left[\frac{i-3}{2}\right]}\binom{i-1-j}{j} r^{i-1-2 j} s^{j}+s^{(i-1) / 2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We see that the summand gives $r^{i-1}$ for $i=0$ and $s^{(i-1) / 2}$ for $i=\left[\frac{i-1}{2}\right]$. We combine these terms into the summation and we have the expression for $G_{i}$.

Hence, in any case, we do obtain the desired formula for $G_{i}$, so it must be valid for all terms of the sequence.

In passing, we might note that for the Fibonacci sequence we have

$$
F_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k-1}{2}\right]}(k-1-j), k>0 ; F_{0}=0
$$

In the next theorem for the $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$, we need the following property of binomial coefficients:

$$
\frac{i-1}{i-1-j}(i-1-j)+\frac{i-2}{i-1-j}\binom{i-1-j}{j-1}=\frac{i}{i-j}\binom{i-j}{j}
$$

This can be readily verified using factorials.
Theorem 3: For the sequence $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$,

$$
M_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]} \frac{k}{k-j}\binom{k-j}{j} r^{k-2 j} s^{j}, k>0 ; M_{0}=2 .
$$

The proof is by induction, so we first note that it is valid for $k=1$, 2,3 .

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{1}=\sum_{j=0}^{0} \frac{1}{1-j}\binom{1-j}{j} r^{1-2 j} s^{j}=\frac{1}{1}\binom{1}{0} r^{1} s^{0}=r ; \\
& M_{2}=\sum_{j=0}^{1} \frac{2}{2-j}\binom{2-j}{j} r^{2-2 j} s^{j}=\frac{2}{2}\binom{2}{0} r^{2}+\frac{2}{1}\binom{1}{1} s=r^{2}+2 s ; \\
& M_{3}=\sum_{j=0}^{1} \frac{3}{3-j}\binom{3-j}{j} r^{3-2 j} s^{j}=\frac{3}{3}\binom{3}{0} r^{3}+\frac{3}{2}\binom{2}{1} r^{2}=r^{3}+3 r^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We assume that the formula is valid for $k=2,3, \ldots, i-1$ and show it is valid for $M$. The proof is similar to that of Theorem 2 except that we have an extra term for the case $i$ is even.

We start with the basic

$$
\begin{aligned}
r M_{i-1}+s M_{i-2}= & \sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-1}{2}\right]} \frac{i-1}{i-1-j}\binom{i-1-j}{j} r^{i-2 j} s^{j} \\
& +\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{i-2}{2}\right]} \frac{i-2}{i-2-j}\binom{i-2-j}{j-1} r^{i-2-2 j} s^{j+1}
\end{aligned}
$$

Once more we break off the first term in the first summation and shift the second summation index to give

$$
r^{i}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-1}{2}\right]} \frac{i-1}{i-1-j}\binom{i-1-j}{j} r^{i-2 j} s^{j}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i}{2}\right]} \frac{i-2}{i-1-j}\binom{i-1-j}{j-1} r^{i-2 j} s^{j}
$$

If $i$ is odd, the two summations have the same upper limit; thus, we can combine them using the property of binomial coefficients given before the theorem. This gives, for the summation,

$$
r^{i}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i}{2}\right]} \frac{i}{i-j}\binom{i-j}{j} r^{i-2 j} s^{j}
$$

Finally, note that the summand is $r^{i}$ for $j=0$. We combine into a single sum that is the formula for $M_{i}$.

In case $i$ is even, the second summation has an extra term of $2 s^{i / 2}$. If we separate it from the summation, we can combine the two summations to get

$$
r^{i}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{i-2}{2}\right]} \frac{i}{i-j}(i-j) r^{i-2 j} s^{j}+2 s^{i / 2}
$$

The summand is $r^{i}$ for $j=0$ and $2 s^{i / 2}$ for $j=i / 2$, so we can combine these and obtain the expression for $M_{i}$. Hence, in either case, the formula is valid for all integers $k$.

This theorem gives, for the general term of the Lucas sequence,

$$
L_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]} \frac{k}{k-j}\binom{k-j}{j}, k>0 ; L_{0}=2
$$

## 3. THE FORMULATION FOR $U_{k}$

In this section, we first prove a basic result for $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$. It is comparable to the result in Waddill's paper for $K_{n}=G_{n}$.
Theorem 4: The general term of $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ can be expressed as

$$
U_{k}=U_{t+j}=G_{j} U_{t+1}+G_{j-1} s U_{t}
$$

Once more the proof is by induction. For $j=2$, we have

$$
U_{t+2}=G_{2} U_{t+1}+G_{1} s U_{t}=r U_{t+1}+s U_{t}
$$

which is true for all $t$. Assume that the expression is true for $j=2$, .., $i$ - 1. Then, since $U_{t+i}$ is an $r, s$ sequence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
U_{t+i} & =r U_{t+i-1}+s U_{t+i-2}=r\left(G_{i-1} U_{t+1}+G_{i-2} s U_{t}\right)+s\left(G_{i-2} U_{t+1}+G_{i-3} s U_{t}\right) \\
& =\left(r G_{i-1}+s G_{i-2}\right) U_{t+1}+\left(r G_{i-2}+s G_{i-3}\right) s U_{t}=G_{i} U_{t+1}+G_{i-1} U_{t}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, the result is true for $j=i$ and so is true for all integers.
We can now give a formulation for $U_{k}$ in terms of its initial values $U_{0}$ and $U_{1}$. This is given in the next theorem.
Theorem 5: The general term of the $r, s$ sequence $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ is given by

$$
U_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]}(k-j) \frac{(k-2 j) U_{1}+j r U_{0}}{k-j} p^{k-1-2 j} s^{j}
$$

In Theorem 4, we take $t=0$, so $j=k$, and we have

$$
U_{k}=G_{k} U_{1}+G_{k-1} s U_{0}
$$

Substituting the result of Theorem 2 for $G_{k}, G_{k-1}$,

$$
U_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k-1}{2}\right]}(k-1-j) x^{k-1-2 j} s^{j} U_{1}+\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k-2}{2}\right]}\binom{k-2-j}{j} r^{k-2-2 j} s^{j}\left(s U_{0}\right)
$$

Once more we break off the first term of the first summation and shift the index of the second summation to give

$$
r^{k-1} U_{1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{k-1}{2}\right]}(k-1-j) r^{k-1-2 j_{S} U^{j} U_{1}}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{1}{2}\right]}\binom{k-1-j}{j-1} r^{k-2 j} s^{j} U_{0} .
$$

Again, we consider the two cases where $k$ is odd or even. For $k$ odd, the two upper indices are equal, so we can combine the two summations to obtain

$$
\left.r^{k-1} U_{1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]}(k-1-j) U_{1}+\binom{k-1-j}{j-1} r U_{0}\right] r^{k-1-2 j_{s}^{j}}
$$

It can be verified that the summand can be written so that we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
U_{k} & =r^{k-1} U_{1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]}\binom{k-j}{j} \frac{(k-2 j) U_{1}+j r U_{0}}{k-j} r^{k-1-2 j_{\mathcal{S}^{j}}} \\
& =\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]}(k-j) \frac{(k-2 j) U_{1}+j r U_{0}}{k-j} r^{k-1-2 j_{S^{j}}}
\end{aligned}
$$

For $k$ even, we break off the last term in the second summation and have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.r^{k-1} U_{1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{k-2}{2}\right]}(k-1-j) U_{1}+\binom{k-1-j}{j-1} r U_{0}\right] r^{k-1-2 j} s^{j}+s^{k / 2} U_{0} \\
= & r^{k-1} U_{1}+\sum_{j=1}^{\left[\frac{k-2}{2}\right]}(k-j) \frac{(k-2 j) U_{1}+j r U_{0}}{k-j} r^{k-1-2 j_{s} j}+s^{k / 2} U_{0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

we note that the summand gives $r^{k-1} U_{1}$ for $j=0$ and $s^{k / 2} U_{0}$ for $j=k / 2$. Thus we can write, for the general $k$,

$$
U_{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{\left[\frac{k}{2}\right]}(k-j) \frac{(k-2 j) U_{1}+j r U_{0}}{k-j} p^{k-1-2 j_{s} j}
$$

It can be verified that by letting $U_{1}=M_{1}=r$ and $U_{0}=M_{0}=2$, we obtain the expression for $M_{k}$ given in Theorem 3.

We can obtain an expression for $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ in terms of $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$. This is shown in the next theorem.
Theorem 6: The $\left\{U_{k}\right\}$ is given by

$$
U_{k}=U_{t+j}=\frac{M_{1} M_{j}+s M_{0} M_{j-1}}{M_{1}^{2}+s M_{0}^{2}} U_{t+j}+\frac{M_{1} M_{j-1}+s M_{0} M_{j-2}}{M_{1}^{2}+s M_{0}^{2}} U_{t}
$$

We can obtain this result from Theorem 4 by determining $G_{j}$ and $G_{j-1}$ in terms of $\left\{M_{k}\right\}$. For this, we start with

$$
M_{j-1}=G_{j-1} M_{1}+G_{j-2} s M_{0}=r G_{j-1}+2 s G_{j-2}
$$

Since $G_{j}=r G_{j-1}+s G_{j-2}$, it follows that $2 s G_{j-2}=2 G_{j}-2 r G_{j-1}$. We substitute this into the expression for $M_{j-1}$, and also write the expression for $M_{j}$ to give the two equations:

$$
\begin{aligned}
M_{j-1} & =2 G_{j}-r G_{j-1} ; \\
M_{j} & =r G_{j}+2 s G_{j-1} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The solutions for $G_{i}$ and $G_{i-1}$ are

$$
G_{j}=\frac{r M_{j}+2 s M_{j-1}}{r^{2}+4 s}=\frac{M_{1} M_{j}+s M_{0} M_{j-1}}{M_{1}^{2}+s M_{0}^{2}}
$$

and

$$
G_{j-1}=\frac{2 M_{j}-r M_{j-1}}{r^{2}+4 s}=\frac{2\left(r M_{j-1}+s M_{j-2}\right)-r M_{j-1}}{r^{2}+4 s}=\frac{M_{1} M_{j-1}+s M_{0} M_{j-2}}{M_{1}^{2}+s M_{0}^{2}} .
$$

Substituting the results in the expression for $U_{k}$ of Theorem 4 gives the required expression for this theorem.

The formulation for $U_{k}$ given in Theorem 5 has been programmed by Robert C. Fitzgerald. He is a senior in Computer Science. We can generate the $U_{k}$ for specified values of $r, s, U_{1}$ and $U_{0}$.

Special cases of this result for $e=0$ and other particular values of $r$ and $s$ will be considered in a future paper.

## REFERENCES

1. R. G. Buschman. "Fibonacci Numbers, Chebyshev Polynomials, Generalizations and Difference Equations." The Fibonacci Quarterly 1 (1963):1-8.
2. A. F. Horadam. "Basic Properties of a Certain Generalized Sequence of Numbers." The Fibonacci Quarterly 3 (1965):161-176.
3. Marce1lus Waddill. "Matrices and Generalized Fibonacci Sequences." The Fibonacci Quarterly 12 (1974):381-386,

## *** $\begin{aligned} & * \\ & \end{aligned}$

## THORO'S CONJECTURE AND ALLIED DIVISIBILITY PROPERTY OF LUCAS NUMBERS

SAHIB SINGH
Clarion State College, Clarion, PA 16214
In [3], Thoro made a conjecture that for any prime $p \equiv 3(\bmod 4)$, the congruence $F_{2 n+1} \equiv 0(\bmod p)$ is not solvable where $F_{2 n+1}$ is an arbitrary Fibonacci number of odd index. The conjecture has already been proved. In what follows, we give a different proof of this and discuss another problem that arose during this investigation.
Proof: If possible, let the above congruence be true: since $F_{2 n+1}=F_{n}^{2}+F_{n+1}^{2}$ (see [1], p. 56), we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{n}^{2}+F_{n+1}^{2} \equiv 0(\bmod p) \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Under this hypothesis, it follows that $p$ divides neither $F_{n}$ nor $F_{n+1}$. This
is justified because if, on the contrary, $p$ divides $F_{n}$, then (1) would enable us to conclude that $p$ divides $F_{n+1}$, forcing us to the invalid result that $p$ divides ( $F_{n}, F_{n+1}$ ) or $p$ divides 1 . Hence,

$$
F_{n}^{2} \equiv-F_{n+1}^{2}(\bmod p)
$$

Using Legendre symbol, it means that

$$
\left(\frac{-F_{n+1}^{2}}{p}\right)=1 \quad \text { or } \quad\left(\frac{-1}{p}\right)=1
$$

This is not valid, since the prime $p$ is $\equiv 3(\bmod 4)$. The required conclusion is now immediate.

Further analysis in regard to divisibility property possessed by Lucas numbers yielded the following theorem.
Theorem: If $L_{2 n}$ is an arbitrary Lucas number of even index, then there always exists a prime $p \equiv 3(\bmod 4)$ which satisfies the congruence $L_{2 n} \equiv 0(\bmod p)$ 。
Proof: Using the result $F_{2 n+1} \equiv 1,2,5(\bmod 8)$ of [3] and the fact that $\bar{L}_{2 n}=F_{2 n-1}+F_{2 n+1}($ see $[1], p .56)$, we obtain $L_{2 n} \equiv 2,3,4,6,7(\bmod 8)$. This means that $L_{2 n} \not \equiv 1(\bmod 4)$. Since the case of $L_{2 n}$ being even arises only when $3 \mid n$, we conclude that $L_{6 n \pm 2} \equiv 3(\bmod 4)$. This means that $L_{6 n \pm 2}$ always contains at least one prime factor $p$ with $p \equiv 3$ (mod 4). In fact, in this case, either this Lucas number is prime of this type or it will contain an odd number of prime factors of this type. For discussion of the case $L_{6 k}$, we first observe that all the members of the family $L_{6 k}$ can be obtained from $L_{2^{m}(6 n+3)}$ by choosing suitable values of $m$ and $n$, where $m=1,2,3, \ldots$ and $n=0,1,2, \ldots$. Now, using the fact that

$$
L_{t} \mid L_{s} \text { iff } s=(2 k-1) t
$$

(see [1], p. 40), we get

$$
L_{2^{m}} \mid L_{2^{m}(6 n+3)}
$$

Since $\left(2^{m}, 3\right)=1$, by previous discussion, there always exists a prime $p \equiv 3$ (mod 4) such that $p \mid L_{2^{m}}$, which implies that $p \mid L_{2^{m}(6 n+3)}$ and the proof is complete. It is easy to verify that $3\left|L_{6}, 7\right| L_{12}, 3\left|L_{18}, 47\right| L_{24}$ and so on. For a strong result, namely $2 \cdot 3^{k} \mid L_{2 \cdot 3^{k}}$, refer to [2].
Corollary: $L_{6 n}$ contains an even number of prime factors $p$ where $p \equiv 3$ (mod 4).

Proof: From the well-known identities (see [1], p. 56), we have

$$
L_{2 n}=F_{n-1}^{2}+2 F_{n}^{2}+F_{n+1}^{2}
$$

which yields

$$
L_{6 n}=F_{3 n-1}^{2}+2 F_{3 n}^{2}+F_{3 n+1}^{2}
$$

Since $F_{3 n}$ is even whereas $F_{3 n-1}$ and $F_{3 n+1}$ are odd, we have $F_{3 n-1}^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod 8)$, $F_{3 n+1}^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod 8)$, and $2 F_{3 n}^{2} \equiv 0(\bmod 8)$. Therefore, $L_{6 n} \equiv 2(\bmod 8)$ or $L_{6 n}=$ $2(4 \alpha+1)$ for a suitable $\alpha$.

From the above theorem, we have the existence of at least one prime $p \equiv 3(\bmod 4)$ such that $p \mid L_{6 n}$. We conclude that $L_{6 n}$ must have an even number of such factors for justifying the odd factor $(4 \alpha+1)$ stated above.

## REFERENCES

1. Verner E. Hoggatt, Jr. Fibonacci and Lucas Numbers. Boston: HoughtonMiff1in Company, 1969.
2. V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& G. E. Bergum. "Divisibility and Congruence Relations." The Fibonacci Quarterly 2 (1974):189.
3. D. Thoro. "Two Fibonacci Conjectures." The Fibonacci Quarterly 3 (1965): 184-186.

```
A CLASS OF SOLUTIONS OF THE EQUATION \(\sigma(n)=2 n+t\)
NEVILLE ROBBINS
Bernard M. Baruch College, New York, NY 10010
```

INTRODUCTION
Let the nondeficient natural number $n$ satisfy
(1)

$$
f(n)=t
$$

where $f(n)=\sigma(n)-2 n$, and $t$ is a given nonnegative integer. Clearly, (1) is equivalent to
$\left(1^{*}\right) \quad \sigma(n)=2 n+t$.
Definition 1: $m$ is acceptable with respect to $n$ if $m$ is a nondeficient proper divisor of $n$.
Definition 2: $n$ is primitive if no number is acceptable with respect to $n$; otherwise, $n$ is nonprimitive.

Remark 1: Primitive nondeficient numbers were defined by L. E. Dickson [3], p. 413.

If $t=0$ in (1), then $n$ is called perfect. It is known that when $n$ is perfect:
(a) if $n$ is even, then $n=2^{p-1}\left(2^{p}-1\right)$ where $2^{p}-1$ is prime (Euclid-Euler);
(b) if $n$ is odd, then $n$ has at least 8 distinct prime factors
[4] and exceeds $10^{50}$ [5];
(c) $n$ is primitive.

If $t=1$ in (1), then $n$ is called quasiperfect [2]. It is known that if $n$ is quasiperfect, then:
(a) $n$ is odd and primitive [2];
(b) $n$ has at least 6 distinct prime factors and exceeds $10^{30}$ [6].

On the other hand, for $t=3$, by inspection we obtain the nonprimitive solution $n=18$. This suggests that nonprimitive solutions of (1), when they exist, are more easily obtained than primitive ones.

In this article, we shall determine the set of all nonprimitive solutions of (1) for each $t$ such that $2 \leq t \leq 100$. Theorem 1 states that Table 5 contains all such solutions for the given range of values of $t$.

$$
{ }^{*} *
$$

Definition 3: For given nonnegative $t$, let $S(t)$ denote the set of all nonprimitive solutions of (1).

Pomerance [7] showed that $S(t)$ is finite unless there exists $k$ such that $t=\sigma(k)=2 k$.
Remark 2: In this case, a subset of $S(t)$ consists of all numbers $k q$ where $q$ is prime and $(k, q)=1$. If also $k$ is even, so that $t=2^{p}\left(2^{p}-1\right)$ and $2^{p}-1$ is prime, then it is easily verified that $2^{2 p-1}\left(2^{p}-1\right)$ and $2^{p-1}\left(2^{p}-1\right)^{3}$ also belong to $S(t)$.
Lemma 1: If $m$ is acceptable with respect to $n$, then $f(m)<f(n)$.
Proof: By [7], Lemma 5, we have $\sigma(m) / m<\sigma(n) / n$. Therefore,

$$
(\sigma(m)-2 m) / m<(\sigma(n)-2 n) / n,
$$

i.e., $f(m) / m<f(n) / n$. Now,

$$
f(m) \geq 0 \Rightarrow f(m) / n<f(m) / m \Rightarrow f(m) / n<f(n) / n \Rightarrow f(m)<f(n)
$$

Definition 4: $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$ if $m$ is the largest number that is acceptable with respect to $n$.
Lemma 2: If $n$ is nonprimitive and $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$, then there exists a prime, $p$, such that $n=m p$.
Proof: Let $p$ be a prime which divides $n / m$, i.e., mp divides $n$. Now $m p>m$, so that, by hypothesis and Lemma 1 , we have

$$
f(m p)>f(m) \geq 0
$$

Since $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$, $m p$ is not a proper divisor of $n$. Thus, $m p=n$.
Corollary 2.1: $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$ if and only if $m=n / p$, where $p$ is the least prime such that $n / p$ is an integer which is acceptable with respect to $n$.

Proof: The proof follows directly from Lemma 2.
Corollary 2.2: If $n / 2$ is a nondeficient integer, then $n / 2$ is maximal with respect to $n$.
Proof: The proof follows directly from Corollary 2.1.
In order to construct Table 5, we first determine all nonprimitive $n$ such that $f(n) \leq 100$. Assume, furthermore, that $n=m p$ where $p$ is prime and $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$. The need for the latter condition will be justified below.

Case 1. Suppose $(m, p)=1$. Then

$$
f(n)=f(m p)=\sigma(m p)-2 m p=(p+1) \sigma(m)-2 m p=p f(m)+\sigma(m)
$$

Thus, $2 m \leq \sigma(m) \leq f(n) \leq 100$, so that $m \leq 50$. Now,

$$
f(m) \geq 0 \Rightarrow m \varepsilon\{6,12,18,20,24,28,30,36,40,42,48\}
$$

Suppose that $m=2^{a} 3^{b} c>6$, where $a, b$, and $c$ are natural numbers and ( $6, c$ ) $=1$. Then $n=2^{a} 3^{b} c p$, with $(6 c, p)=1$. If $c=1$, then $a>1$ or $b>1$. If $a>1$, then $2^{a-1} 3^{b} p$ is acceptable with respect to $n$, so that $2^{a-1} 3^{b} p<2^{a} 3^{b}$, which implies $p<2$, an impossibility. Similarly, $b>1$ implies $p<3$. If $c>1$, then $2^{a} 3^{b} p$ is acceptable with respect to $n$, so that $2^{a} 3^{b} p<2^{a} 3^{b} c$, and $p<c$. Now,

$$
(6 c, p)=1 \Rightarrow p \geq 5 \Rightarrow c \geq 6 .
$$

But $6 c \leq m \leq 50 \Rightarrow c \leq 8$. Thus,

$$
(6, c)=1 \Rightarrow c=7 \Rightarrow m=42 \Rightarrow f(n)=12 p+96 \geq 156,
$$

contradicting the hypothesis. Likewise, $m=40 \Rightarrow f(n)=10 p+90 \geq 120$. If $m=6$ and $p \geq 5$, then $f(6 p)=12$ ! By Corollary 2.1, it is easily verified that 6 is maximal with respect to $6 p$. If $m=28$ and $(14, p)=1$, then $f(28 p)=$ 56. If $p<11$, then $14 p$ is maximal with respect to $28 p$; if $p \geq 11$, then 28 is maximal with respect to $28 p$. If $m=20$ and $(10, p)=1$, then $f(20 p)=42+2 p$. As above, 20 is maximal with respect to $20 p$ if and only if $p \geq 11$. Also,

$$
f(n)=f(20 p) \leq 100 \Rightarrow p \leq 29 .
$$

For each $m \in\{6,28,20\}$, and for each prime $p$ such that $m$ is maximal with respect to $n=m p$, and $f(n) \leq 100$, we list $m, p, n$, and $f(n)$ in Table 1 .

TABLE 1

| $m$ | $p$ | $n$ | $f(n)$ |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| 6 | $\geq 5$ | $6 p$ | 12 |
| 28 | $\geq 11$ | $28 p$ | 56 |
| 20 | 11 | 220 | 64 |
| 20 | 13 | 260 | 68 |
| 20 | 17 | 340 | 76 |
| 20 | 19 | 380 | 80 |
| 20 | 23 | 460 | 88 |
| 20 | 29 | 580 | 100 |

Case 2. Suppose $p$ divides $m$. Let $m=p^{k} r, n=p^{k+1}$, where $(p, r)=1$. Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
f(m) & =\sigma(m)-2 m=\sigma\left(p^{k} r\right)-2 p^{k} r=\sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \sigma(p)-2 p^{k} p^{\prime} \\
& =\left(p^{k}+\sigma\left(p^{k-1}\right)\right) \sigma(r)-2 p^{k} r=p^{k}(\sigma(p)-2 p)+\sigma\left(p^{k-1}\right) \sigma(r) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly,

$$
f(n)=p^{k+1}(\sigma(p)-2 r)+\sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \sigma(r) .
$$

Therefore,

$$
f(n)-f(m)=\left(p^{k+1}-p^{k}\right)(\sigma(r)-2 r)+p^{k} \sigma(r)=p^{k}(p \sigma(r)-(p-1) 2 r) .
$$

Now,

$$
f(n)=t \Rightarrow 0 \leq f(n)-f(m)=d \leq t
$$

Therefore, the solutions of (1) may be found among the solutions of

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(n)-f(m)=d, \text { where } d \leq 100 \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $h(p, k, r)=p^{k}(p \sigma(r)-(p-1) 2 r)$. Then (2) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=d, \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the restriction that

$$
\begin{equation*}
f\left(p^{k} p^{\prime}\right) \geq 0 \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, (4) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
r \geq 2, \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $f\left(p^{k}\right)<0$ for all primes $p$ and all exponents $k$. Henceforth we consider (3).

Definition 5: Let $g(r)=\sigma(r)-r$, where $r$ is a natural number.
Lemma 3: If
(6)

$$
h(2, k, r)=d \text {, where } r \text { is odd, }
$$

then $d \equiv 0(\bmod 4)$. All solutions of (6) for $d \leq 100$ are given in Table 2 .
TABLE 2

| d | k | $g(r)$ | $r$ | $s$ | $n$ | $f(n)$ | d | k | $g(r)$ | $r$ | $s$ | $n$ | $f(n)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 4 | 1 | 1 | 3 | + | 12 | 4 | 64 | 1 | 16 | * | * | * | * |
| 8 | 1 | 2 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 2 | 8 | 49 | + | 392 | 71 |
| 8 | 2 | 1 | 3 | + | 24 | 12 | 64 | 3 | 4 | 9 | + | 144 | 115 |
| 8 | 2 | 1 | 5 | + | 40 | 10 | 64 | 4 | 2 | * | * | * | * |
| 8 | 2 | 1 | 7 | + | 56 | 8 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 3 | + | 192 | 124 |
| 12 | 1 | 3 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 5 | + | 320 | 122 |
| 16 | 1 | 4 | 9 | + | 36 | 19 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 7 | + | 448 | 120 |
| 16 | 2 | 2 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 11 | + | 704 | 116 |
| 16 | 3 | 1 | 3 | + | 48 | 28 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 13 | + | 832 | 114 |
| 16 | 3 | 1 | 5 | + | 80 | 26 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 17 | + | 1088 | 110 |
| 16 | 3 | 1 | 7 | + | 112 | 24 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 19 | + | 1216 | 108 |
| 16 | 3 | 1 | 11 | + | 176 | 20 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 23 | + | 1472 | 104 |
| 16 | 3 | 1 | 13 | + | 208 | 18 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 29 | + | 1856 | 98 |
| 20 | 1 | 5 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 31 | + | 1984 | 96 |
| 24 | 1 | 6 | 25 | - | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 37 | + | 2368 | 90 |
| 24 | 2 | 3 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 41 | + | 2824 | 86 |
| 28 | 1 | 7 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 43 | + | 2952 | 84 |
| 32 | 1 | 8 | 49 | - | * | * | 64 | 5 | 1 | 47 | + | 3008 | 80 |
| 32 | 2 | 4 | 9 | + | 72 | 51 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 53 | + | 3392 | 74 |
| 32 | 3 | 2 | * | * | * | * | 64 | 5 |  | 59 | + | 3776 | 68 |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 3 | + | 96 | 60 | 64 | 5 | 1 | 61 | + | 3904 | 66 |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 5 | + | 160 | 58 | 68 | 1 | 17 | 39 | + | 156 | 80 |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 7 | + | 224 | 56 | 68 | 1 | 17 | 55 | - | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 11 | + | 352 | 52 | 72 | 1 | 18 | 289 | - | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 13 | + | 416 | 50 | 72 | 2 | 9 | 15 | + | 120 | 120 |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 17 | + | 544 | 46 | 76 | 1 | 19 | 65 | - | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 19 | + | 608 | 44 | 76 | 1 | 19 | 77 | - | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 23 | $+$ | 736 | 40 | 80 | 1 | 20 | 361 | - | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 29 | + | 928 | 34 | 80 | 2 | 10 | * | * | * | * |
| 32 | 4 | 1 | 31 | + | 992 | 32 | 80 | 3 | 5 | * | * | * | * |
| 36 | 1 | 9 | 15 | + | 60 | 48 | 84 | 1 | 21 | 51 | + | 204 | 96 |
| 40 | 1 | 10 | * | * | * | * | 84 | 1 | 21 | 91 | - | * | * |
| 40 | 2 | 5 | * | * | * | * | 88 | 1 | 22 | * | * | * | * |
| 44 | 1 | 11 | 21 | + | 84 | 56 | 88 | 2 | 11 | 21 | + | 168 | 144 |
| 48 | 1 | 12 | 121 | - | * | * | 92 | 1 | 23 | 57 | + | 228 | 104 |
| 48 | 2 | 6 | 25 | + | 200 | 65 | 92 | 1 | 23 | 85 | - | * | * |
| 48 | 3 | 3 | * | * | * | * | 96 | 1 | 24 | 529 | - | * | * |
| 52 | 1 | 13 | 27 | + | 108 | 64 | 96 | 2 | 12 | 121 | - | * | * |
| 52 | 1 | 13 | 35 | + | 140 | 56 | 96 | 3 | 6 | 25 | + | 400 | 161 |
| 56 | 1 | 14 | 169 | - | * | * | 96 | 4 | 3 | * | * | * | * |
| 56 | 2 | 7 | * | * | * | * | 100 | 1 | 25 | 95 | - | * | * |
| 60 | 1 | 15 | 33 | + | 132 | 72 | 100 | 1 | 25 | 119 | - | * | * |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |  | 100 | 1 | 25 | 143 | - | * | * |

## Proot:

$h(2, k, r)=2^{k}(2 \sigma(r)-2 r)=2^{k+1} g(r)=d ; k \geq 1 \Rightarrow d \equiv 0(\bmod 4)$.
To solve (6) for $d \leq 100$, we proceed as follows. For each $d$ such that $d \equiv 0$ $(\bmod 4)$, and for each $k$ such that $d \equiv 0\left(\bmod 2^{k+1}\right)$, we compute $g(r)=2^{-(k+1)} d$. Next, we list the corresponding odd values of $r$, if any, using [1], Table 6.1. If no such $r$ exists, then there is no solution of (6) corresponding to the chosen values of $d$ and $k$. In this case, the $r$ column and all columns to its right contain asterisks. For each possible $r$, we compute $f\left(2^{k} r\right)$ and list its sign, $s$, considering 0 to be positive. If $f\left(2^{k} r\right)<0$, then there is no solution, and the last two columns contain asterisks. If $f\left(2^{k} r\right) \geq 0$, then we have obtained a solution of (6), and $n=2^{k+1} p$ corresponds to a solution of (2). In this case, we list $n$ and $f(n)$. If $g(r)=1$, then $r$ is prime and (4) implies $r \leq 2^{k}-1$. In this case, we list only such $r$.
Lemma 4: If

$$
\begin{equation*}
p \sigma(r)-(p-1) 2 r=v \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p$ is an odd prime, $(p, r)=1$, and (4) holds, then we must have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma(r) & =p v+(p-1) 2 u ;  \tag{8}\\
r & =(p+1) v / 2+p u ;  \tag{9}\\
(p, v) & =1 ;  \tag{10}\\
r & \leq v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) / 2 . \tag{11}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof: Solving (7) for $\sigma(p)$ and $2 r$ in terms of $p$ and $v$, one has

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma(r) & =p v+(p+1) w ;  \tag{8*}\\
2 r & =(p+1) v+p w . \tag{9*}
\end{align*}
$$

( $9 *) \Rightarrow w$ is even. Setting $w=2 u$, one obtains (8) and (9). (10) follows directly from the hypothesis. (11) is derived from (4) as follows:

$$
\begin{gathered}
f\left(p^{k} r\right) \geq 0 \Rightarrow \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \sigma(r) \geq 2 p^{k} p \Rightarrow p \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \sigma(r) \geq 2 p^{k+1_{1}} ; \\
(7) \Rightarrow p \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \sigma(r)-(p-1) \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) 2 r=v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) .
\end{gathered}
$$

Therefore,

$$
2 p^{k+1}-\left(p^{k+1}-1\right) 2 r \leq v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \Rightarrow 2 r \leq v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) \Rightarrow r \leq v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) / 2
$$

Corollary 4.1: If

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=p^{j} s, \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p$ is an odd prime, $s \geq 1$, and $(p, s)=1$, then $k=j$.
Proof: By hypothesis, (7) holds with $v=p^{j-k} s$. Now (10) implies $j-k=0$, i.e., $k=j$.

Lemma 5: If

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hbar(p, k, r)=q, \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q$ is an odd prime, then $k=1$, and for some integer, $a$, we have

$$
p=q=2^{a}-1, r=2^{a-1}
$$

Proof: $p$ divides $q \Rightarrow p=q$. Hypothesis and Corollary $4.1 \Rightarrow k=1$. Thus, (13) reduces to (7) with $v=1$. From (11), we have $r \leq(p+1) / 2$, so that
$u \leq 0$ in (9). But (5) and (9) $\Rightarrow u \geq(3-p) / 2 p$. Therefore, $u=0$, i.e., $\sigma(r)=p, r=(p+1) / 2 . \quad \sigma(r)=p \Rightarrow r=s^{\alpha-1}$ for some prime, $s$, and some integer $\alpha \geq 2$. Now,

$$
s^{a-1}+s^{a-2}+\cdots+s+1=\sigma\left(s^{a-1}\right)=\sigma(r)=p=2 r-1=2 s^{\alpha-1}-1
$$

Therefore, 2 divides $s$, i.e., $s=2$. Thus, $r=2^{\alpha-1}, p=2^{\alpha}-1$.
Lemma 6: For any $j$, the unique solution of

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=3^{j} \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

is: $p=3, k=j, r=2$.
Proof: Clearly, $p=3, k=j$, and (14) reduces to $3 \sigma(r)-4 r=1$. (8) and (9) $\Rightarrow r=2+3 u, \sigma(r)=3+4 u \Rightarrow \sigma(r)$ is odd $\Rightarrow r=2^{a} b^{2}$ with $a \geq 0$ and $b$ odd. Furthermore, $(3, r)=1 \Rightarrow(6, b)=1 . \quad r \equiv 2(\bmod 3) \Rightarrow 2^{a} b^{2} \equiv 2(\bmod 3) \Rightarrow$ $2^{\alpha} \equiv 2(\bmod 3) \Rightarrow \alpha \geq 1 \Rightarrow r$ is even $\Rightarrow \sigma(r) / r \geq 3 / 2 \Rightarrow 2 \sigma(r) \geq 3 \Rightarrow 6+8 u \geq 6+$ $9 u \Rightarrow u \leq 0 \Rightarrow r \leq 2$. By (5), $r=2$.
Lemma 7: For no $j$ does
(15)

$$
h(p, k, r)=5^{j}
$$

have a solution.
Proof: If a solution exists, then $p=5, k=j$, and (15) reduces to $5 \sigma(r)$ $8 r=1$, so that $r=3+5 u, \sigma(r)=5+8 u$, and $r=2^{a} b^{2}$ with $a \geq 0$ and (10, b) $=1$. Now $r \equiv 3(\bmod 5) \Rightarrow 2^{a} b^{2} \equiv 3(\bmod 5) \Rightarrow 2^{a} \equiv 2$ or $3(\bmod 5) \Rightarrow a=2 c+1$. But $\sigma\left(2^{2 c+1}\right) \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$. Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sigma(r) \equiv 0(\bmod 3) & \Rightarrow u \equiv 2(\bmod 3) \Rightarrow r \equiv 1(\bmod 3) \\
& \Rightarrow 2^{2 c+1} b^{2} \equiv 1(\bmod 3) \Rightarrow b^{2} \equiv 2(\bmod 3),
\end{aligned}
$$

an impossibility.
Lemma 8: If

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=q^{j}, \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $q$ is an odd prime, $j \geq 2$, and $q^{j} \leq 100$, then $k=j$ and either
(i) $p=3, r=2,2 \leq j \leq 4$; or
(ii) $p=7, r=4, j=2$.

Proof:

$$
q^{2} \leq q^{j} \leq 100 \Rightarrow q \leq 10 \Rightarrow q \varepsilon\{3,5,7\}
$$

If $q=3$, then $3^{j} \leq 100 \Rightarrow j \leq 4$, and the solutions of (16) are given by Lemma 6. Lemma $7 \Rightarrow q \neq 5$. If $\bar{q}=7$, then $7^{j} \leq 100 \Rightarrow j=2$, and (16) reduces to $7 \sigma(r)-12 r=1$. Therefore, by Lemma 4, we have

$$
\sigma(r)=7+12 u, r=4+7 u, r \leq 28 .
$$

By inspection, we must have $r=4$.
Combining the results of Lemmas 5 and 8 , we list all solutions of

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=q^{j}, \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $q$ an odd prime and $q^{j} \leq 100$, in Table 3 . For each $q^{j}$, we list $p, k, r$, as well as the $m$, $n$ of the corresponding solution of (2), and $f(n)$. It is easily verified that in each case $m$ is maximal with respect to $n$.

| TABLE 3 |  |  |  |  |  |  |
| ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: | ---: |
| $q$ | $p$ | $k$ | $r$ | $m$ | $n$ | $f(n)$ |
| 3 | 3 | 1 | 2 | 6 | 18 | 3 |
| 7 | 7 | 1 | 4 | 28 | 196 | 7 |
| 9 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 18 | 54 | 12 |
| 27 | 3 | 3 | 2 | 54 | 162 | 39 |
| 31 | 31 | 1 | 16 | 496 | 15736 | 31 |
| 49 | 7 | 2 | 4 | 196 | 1372 | 56 |
| 81 | 3 | 4 | 2 | 162 | 486 | 120 |

Lemma 9: For no odd prime $q$ does

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(p, k, r)=2 q \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

have a solution.
Proof: If a solution exists, then by hypothesis, Lemma 3, and Corollary 4.1, we have $p \neq 2, p=q$, and $k=1$. Thus, (18) reduces to (7) with $v=2$, and we have $\sigma(r)=2 p+(p-1) 2 u, r=p+1+p u, r \leq p+1$. Now, (5) $\Rightarrow u=0$, $r=p+1, \sigma(r)=2 p$. Let $r=2^{\alpha} b$ with $a \geq 1$ and $b$ odd. Then,

$$
\sigma(r)=\sigma\left(2^{a}\right) \sigma(b)=2 p, \text { so that } \sigma(b)=2,
$$

an impossibility.
Definition 6: If $0 \leq a \leq 3$, let

$$
C_{a}=\{r: 2 \leq r \leq 100, \text { and } \sigma(r) \equiv a(\bmod 4)\} .
$$

By inspection, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C_{0}=\{3,6,7,11,12,14,15,19,21,22,23,24,27,28,30,31, \\
& 33,35,38,39,42,43,44,46,47,48,51,54,55,56,57,59, \\
& 60,62,63,65,66,67,69,70,71,75,76,77,78,79,83,84, \\
&85,86,87,88,91,92,93,94,95,96,99\} ; \\
& C_{1}=\{9,49,50,81,100\} ; \\
& C_{2}=\{5,10,13,17,20,26,29,34,37,40,41,45,52,53,58,61, \\
&68,73,74,80,82,89,90,97\} ; \\
& C_{3}=\{2,4,8,16,18,25,32,36,64,72,98\} . \\
& \text { Lemma } 10: \text { In }(3), \text { if } r=q^{b}, \text { where } q \text { is prime, then } q=2 \text { and } p \varepsilon C_{3} . \\
& \text { Proof: }(4) \text { implies } \\
&(p /(p-1))(q /(q-1))>\sigma\left(p^{k} r\right) / p^{k_{r}} \geq 2 \Rightarrow q<2(p-1) /(p-2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $p=3$, then $q<4 \Rightarrow q=2$, since $(p, r)=1$. If $p \geq 5$, then $q<8 / 3 \Rightarrow q=2$. $\sigma\left(2^{b}\right)=2^{b+1}-1 \equiv 3(\bmod 4) \Rightarrow r \varepsilon C_{3}$ 。
Lemma 11: All solutions of (3) such that $p$ is odd, $d \leq 100, d \neq q^{j}$, where $q$ is an odd prime, are given in Table 4.

Proof: To obtain the desired solutions of (3), we proceed as follows: for each $d \neq 2 q, \quad \neq q^{j}$, for each odd prime $p$ such that $p^{k} v=d,(p, v)=1$, we list $p, k, v$. If $r$ exists such that (7) holds, we must have:
(i) $r \leq \underline{r}=\left[v \sigma\left(p^{k}\right) / 2\right]$;
(ii) $r \equiv v(p+1) / 2(\bmod p)$;
(iii) $r \in C_{a}$, where $p v \equiv a(\bmod 4)$;
(iv) $r$ is not a power of a prime unless $r=2^{b}$ and $a=3$.

For convenience, we list $\underline{r}, r_{p}$ [the least positive residue ( $\bmod p$ ) of $v(p+1) / 2$ ], and $a$. If no $r$ exists satisfying the above conditions, then (3) has no solution corresponding to that particular choice of $p, d$. In this case, the $r$ column and all remaining columns contain asterisks. For each $r$ which does satisfy the conditions, we compute and list $w=p \sigma(r)-(p-1) 2 r$. If $w \neq v$, then we have no solution, and the remaining columns contain asterisks. If $w=v$, we have a solution. We list the values $m$ and $n$ of the corresponding solution of (2). Finally, we test $m$ for maximality with respect to $n$ using Corollaries 2.1 and 2.2. If the test is positive, the max column says yes and the final column lists $f(n)$; otherwise, the max column says no and the final column contains an asterisk.

TABLE 4

| d | $p$ | $k$ | $v$ | $\underline{r}$ | $r_{p}$ | $a$ | $r$ | $\omega$ | m | $n$ | max | $f(n)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 12 | 3 | 1 | 4 | 8 | 2 | 0 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 15 | 3 | 1 | 5 | 10 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 12 | 36 | no | * |
| 15 | 5 | 1 | 3 | 9 | 4 | 3 | 4 | 3 | 20 | 100 | yes | 17 |
| 18 | 3 | 2 | 2 | 13 | 1 | 2 | 10 | 14 | * | * | * | * |
| 20 | 5 | 1 | 4 | 12 | 2 | 0 | 12 | 44 | * | * | * | * |
| 21 | 3 | 1 | 7 | 14 | 2 | 1 | 9 | 3 | * | * | * | * |
| 21 | 7 | 1 | 3 | 12 | 5 | 1 | 9 | -17 | * | * | * | * |
| 24 | 3 | 1 | 8 | 16 | 1 | 0 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 28 | 7 | 1 | 4 | 16 | 2 | 0 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 30 | 3 | 1 | 10 | 20 | 2 | 2 | 20 | 46 | * | * | * | * |
| 30 | 5 | 1 | 6 | 18 | 3 | 2 | 18 | 51 | * | * | * | * |
| 33 | 3 | 1 | 11 | 22 | 1 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 33 | 11 | 1 | 3 | 18 | 7 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 35 | 5 | 1 | 7 | 21 | 1 | 3 | 16 | 27 | * | * | * | * |
| 35 | 7 | 1 | 5 | 20 | 6 | 3 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 36 | 3 | 2 | 4 | 26 | 2 | 0 | 14 | 129 | * | * | * | * |
| 39 | 3 | 1 | 13 | 26 | 2 | 3 | 8 | 13 | 24 | 72 | no | * |
| 39 | 13 | 1 | 3 | 21 | 8 | 3 | 8 | 3 | 104 | 1352 | yes | 41 |
| 40 | 5 | 1 | 8 | 24 | 4 | 0 | 14 | 8 | 70 | 350 | yes | 44 |
| 42 | 3 | 1 | 14 | 28 | 1 | 2 | 10 | 14 | 30 | 90 | yes | 54 |
| 42 | 7 | 1 | 6 | 24 | 3 | 2 | 10 | 6 | 70 | 490 | yes | 46 |
| 44 | 11 | 1 | 4 | 24 | 2 | 0 | 24 | 180 | * | * | * | * |
| 45 | 3 | 2 | 5 | 32 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 36 | 108 | no | * |
| 45 | 3 | 2 | 5 | 32 | 1 | 3 | 16 | 29 | * | * | * | * |
| 45 | 3 | 2 | 5 | 32 | 1 | 3 | 25 | -7 | * | * | * | * |
| 45 | 5 | 1 | 9 | 27 | 2 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 48 | 3 | 1 | 16 | 32 | 2 | 0 | 14 | 16 | 42 | 126 | yes | 60 |
| 50 | 5 | 2 | 2 | 31 | 1 | 2 | 26 | 2 | 650 | 3250 | yes | 52 |
| 51 | 3 | 1 | 17 | 34 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 5 | * | * | * | * |
| 51 | 3 | 1 | 17 | 34 | 1 | 3 | 16 | 29 | * | * | * | * |
| 51 | 3 | 1 | 17 | 34 | 1 | 3 | 25 | -7 | * | * | * | * |
| 51 | 17 | 1 | 3 | 27 | 10 | 3 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 52 | 13 | 1 | 4 | 28 | 2 | 0 | 15 | -48 | * | * | * | * |
| 52 | 13 | 1 | 4 | 28 | 2 | 0 | 28 | 56 | * | * | * | * |
| 54 | 3 | 3 | 2 | 40 | 1 | 2 | 10 | 14 | * | * | * | * |


| d | $p$ | $k$ | $v$ | $\underline{r}$ | $r$ | $a$ | $r$ | $w$ | m | $n$ | max | $f(n)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 54 | 3 | 3 | 2 | 40 | 1 | 2 | 34 | 26 | * | * | * | * |
| 54 | 3 | 3 | 2 | 40 | 1 | 2 | 40 | 110 | * | * | * | * |
| 55 | 5 | 1 | 11 | 33 | 3 | 1 | 8 | 11 | 40 | 200 | no | * |
| 55 | 5 | 1 | 11 | 33 | 3 | 1 | 18 | 51 | * | * | * | * |
| 55 | 11 | 1 | 5 | 30 | 8 | 1 | 8 | 5 | 88 | 968 | yes | 59 |
| 56 | 7 | 1 | 8 | 32 | 4 | 0 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 57 | 3 | 1 | 19 | 38 | 2 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 57 | 19 | 1 | 3 | 30 | 11 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 60 | 3 | 1 | 20 | 40 | 1 | 0 | 22 | 20 | 66 | 198 | yes | 72 |
| 60 | 5 | 1 | 12 | 36 | 1 | 0 | 6 | 12 | 30 | 150 | yes | 72 |
| 63 | 3 | 2 | 7 | 45 | 2 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 63 | 7 | 1 | 9 | 36 | 1 | 3 | 8 | 9 | 56 | 392 | no | * |
| 65 | 5 | 1 | 13 | 39 | 4 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 65 | 13 | 1 | 5 | 35 | 9 | 1 | 9 | -47 | * | * | * | * |
| 66 | 3 | 1 | 22 | 44 | 2 | 2 | 20 | 46 | * | * | * | * |
| 66 | 3 | 1 | 22 | 44 | 2 | 2 | 26 | 22 | 78 | 234 | yes | 78 |
| 66 | 11 | 1 | 6 | 36 | 3 | 2 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 68 | 17 | 1 | 4 | 36 | 2 | 0 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 69 | 3 | 1 | 23 | 46 | 1 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 69 | 23 | 1 | 3 | 36 | 13 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 70 | 5 | 1 | 14 | 42 | 2 | 2 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 70 | 7 | 1 | 10 | 40 | 5 | 2 | 26 | -18 | * | * | * | * |
| 70 | 7 | 1 | 10 | 40 | 5 | 2 | 40 | 150 | * | * | * | * |
| 72 | 3 | 2 | 8 | 52 | 1 | 0 | 22 | 20 | * | * | * | * |
| 72 | 3 | 2 | 8 | 52 | 1 | 0 | 28 | 56 | * | * | * | * |
| 72 | 3 | 2 | 8 | 52 | 1 | 0 | 46 | 32 | * | * | * | * |
| 75 | 3 | 1 | 25 | 50 | 2 | 3 | 8 | 13 | * | * | * | * |
| 75 | 3 | 1 | 25 | 50 | 2 | 3 | 32 | 61 | * | * | * | * |
| 75 | 5 | 2 | 3 | 46 | 4 | 3 | 4 | 3 | 100 | 500 | yes | 92 |
| 76 | 19 | 1 | 4 | 40 | 2 | 0 | 21 | -148 | * | * | * | * |
| 77 | 7 | 1 | 11 | 44 | 2 | 1 | 9 | -17 | * | * | * | * |
| 77 | 11 | 1 | 7 | 42 | 9 | 1 | 9 | -37 | * | * | * | * |
| 78 | 3 | 1 | 26 | 52 | 1 | 2 | 10 | 14 | * | * | * | * |
| 78 | 3 | 1 | 26 | 52 | 1 | 2 | 34 | 26 | 102 | 306 | yes | 90 |
| 78 | 3 | 1 | 26 | 52 | 1 | 2 | 40 | 110 | * | * | * | * |
| 78 | 3 | 1 | 26 | 52 | 1 | 2 | 52 | 86 | * | * | * | * |
| 78 | 13 | 1 | 6 | 42 | 3 | 2 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 80 | 5 | 1 | 16 | 48 | 3 | 0 | 28 | 56 | * | * | * | * |
| 80 | 5 | 1 | 16 | 48 | 3 | 0 | 33 | -24 | * | * | * | * |
| 80 | 5 | 1 | 16 | 48 | 3 | 0 | 38 | -4 | * | * | * | * |
| 80 | 5 | 1 | 16 | 48 | 3 | 0 | 48 | 296 | * | * | * | * |
| 84 | 3 | 1 | 28 | 56 | 2 | 0 | 38 | 28 | 114 | 342 | yes | 96 |
| 84 | 7 | 1 | 12 | 48 | 6 | 0 | 6 | 12 | 42 | 294 | yes | 96 |
| 84 | 7 | 1 | 12 | 48 | 6 | 0 | 27 | -44 | * | * | * | * |
| 85 | 5 | 1 | 17 | 51 | 1 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 85 | 17 | 1 | 5 | 45 | 11 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 87 | 3 | 1 | 29 | 58 | 1 | 3 | 4 | 5 | * | * | * | * |
| 87 | 3 | 1 | 29 | 58 | 1 | 3 | 16 | 29 | 48 | 144 | no | * |
| 87 | 3 | 1 | 29 | 58 | 1 | 3 | 25 | -7 | * | * | * | * |
| 87 | 29 | 1 | 3 | 45 | 16 | 3 | 16 | 3 | 474 | 13456 | yes | 89 |
| 88 | 11 | 1 | 8 | 48 | 4 | 0 | 15 | -36 | * | * | * | * |


| d | $p$ | $k$ | $v$ | $\underline{r}$ | $r$ | $\alpha$ | $r$ | $\omega$ | $m$ | $n$ | max | $f(n)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 88 | 11 | 1 | 8 | 48 | 4 | 0 | 48 | 404 | * | * | * | * |
| 90 | 3 | 2 | 10 | 65 | 2 | 2 | 20 | 46 | * | * | * | * |
| 90 | 3 | 2 | 10 | 65 | 2 | 2 | 26 | 22 | * | * | * | * |
| 90 | 5 | 1 | 18 | 54 | 4 | 2 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 91 | 7 | 1 | 13 | 52 | 3 | 3 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 91 | 13 | 1 | 7 | 49 | 10 | 3 | 36 | 319 | * | * | * | * |
| 92 | 23 | 1 | 4 | 48 | 2 | 0 | 48 | 80 | * | * | * | * |
| 93 | 3 | 1 | 31 | 62 | 2 | 1 | 50 | 79 | * | * | * | * |
| 93 | 31 | 1 | 3 | 48 | 17 | 1 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 95 | 5 | 1 | 19 | 57 | 2 | 3 | 32 | 59 | * | * | * | * |
| 95 | 19 | 1 | 5 | 50 | 12 | 3 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 96 | 3 | 1 | 32 | 64 | 1 | 0 | 22 | 20 | * | * | * | * |
| 96 | 3 | 1 | 32 | 64 | 1 | 0 | 28 | 56 | * | * | * | * |
| 96 | 3 | 1 | 32 | 64 | 1 | 0 | 46 | 32 | 138 | 414 | yes | 108 |
| 96 | 3 | 1 | 32 | 64 | 1 | 0 | 55 | -4 | * | * | * | * |
| 98 | 7 | 2 | 2 | 57 | 1 | 2 | * | * | * | * | * | * |
| 99 | 3 | 2 | 11 | 71 | 2 | 1 | 50 | 79 | * | * | * | * |
| 99 | 11 | 1 | 9 | 54 | 10 | 3 | 32 | 53 | * | * | * | * |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 12 | 44 | * | * | * | * |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 22 | 4 | 550 | 2750 | yes | 116 |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 27 | -16 | * | * | * | * |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 42 | 144 | * | * | * | * |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 57 | -76 | * | * | * | * |
| 100 | 5 | 2 | 4 | 62 | 2 | 0 | 62 | -6 | * | * | * | * |

Combining the results of Tables $1,2,3$, and 4 , we form Table 5. For each $t$ such that $2 \leq t \leq 100$ and $S(t)$ is nonempty, we list the members of $S(t)$. If $S(t)$ is empty, then $t$ does not appear as an entry. The requirement that the solutions listed in Tables $1,2,3$, and 4 satisfy a maximality condition assures that distinct entries from these tables yield distinct corresponding entries in Table 5. Therefore, we have proved:
Theorem 1: All solutions of (1) such that $n$ is nonprimitive and $2 \leq t \leq 100$ are given in Table 5.

TABLE 5

| $t$ | $S(t)$ | $t$ | $S(t)$ | $t$ | $S(t)$ | $t$ | $S(t)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 3 | 18 | 28 | 48 | 52 | 352, 3250 | 74 | 3392 |
| 4 | 12 | 31 | 15736 | 54 | 90 | 76 | 340 |
| 7 | 196 | 32 | 992 | 56 | 224, 1372, $28 p^{* *}$ | 78 | 234 |
| 8 | 56 | 34 | 928 | 58 | 160 | 80 | 156, 380, 3008 |
| 10 | 40 | 39 | 162 | 59 | 968 | 84 | 2952 |
| 12 | 24,54, 6 p* | 40 | 736 | 60 | 96, 126 | 86 | 2824 |
| 17 | 100 | 41 | 1352 | 64 | 108, 220 | 88 | 460 |
| 18 | 208 | 44 | 350,608 | 65 | 200 | 89 | 13456 |
| 19 | 36 | 46 | 490, 544 | 66 | 3904 | 90 | 306, 2368 |
| 20 | 176 | 48 | 60 | 68 | 260, 3776 | 92 | 500 |
| 24 | 112 | 50 | 416 | 71 | 392 | 96 | 204, 294, 342, 1984 |
| 26 | 80 | 51 | 72 | 72 | 132, 150, 198 | 98 | 1856 |
| $*_{p}$ prime, $(6, p)=1$ |  |  |  |  |  | 00 | 580 |

## REFERENCES

1. J. Alanen. "Empirical Study of Aliquot Series." (Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Yale University, 1972.)
2. P. Cattaneo. "Sui numeri quasiperfetti." BoZZ. Un. Mat. Ital. (3) 6 (1951):59-62.
3. L. E. Dickson. "Finiteness of the Odd Perfect and Primitive Abundant Numbers With $n$ Distinct Factors." Amer. J. Math. 35 (1913):413-422.
4. P. Hagis, Jr. "Every odd Perfect Number Has at Least Eight Distinct Prime Factors." Notices, Amer. Math. Society 22, No. 1 (1975):Ab. 720-10-14.
5. P. Hagis, Jr. "A Lower Bound for the Set of Odd Perfect Numbers." Math. Comp. 27, No. 124 (1973).
6. M. Kishore. "Quasiperfect Numbers Have at Least Six Distinct Prime Factors." Notices, Amer. Math. Society 22, No. 4 (1975):Ab. 75T-A113.
7. C. Pomerance. "On the Congruences $\sigma(n) \equiv a(\bmod n)$ and $n \equiv a(\bmod \phi(n)) . "$ Acta Arith. 26 (1974):265-272,

WEIGHTED STIRLING NUMBERS OF THE FIRST AND SECOND KIND-I
L. Carlitz

Duke University, Durham, N.C. 27706

## 1. INTRODUCTION

The Stirling numbers of the first and second kind can be defined by
and

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x)_{n} \equiv x(x+1) \cdots(x+n-1)=\sum_{k=0}^{n} S_{1}(n, k) x^{k} \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{n}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} S(n, k) x(x-1) \cdots(x-k+1) \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively.
It is well known that $S_{1}(n, k)$ is the number of permutations of

$$
Z_{n}=\{1,2, \ldots, n\}
$$

with $k$ cycles and that $S(n, k)$ is the number of partitions of the set $Z_{n}$ into $k$ blocks [1, Ch. 5], [2, Ch. 4]. These combinatorial interpretations suggest the following extensions.

Let $n, k$ be positive integers, $n \geq k$, and let $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k$ be nonnegative integers such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
k=k_{1}+k_{2}+\cdots+k_{n}  \tag{1.3}\\
n=k_{1}+2 k_{2}+\cdots+n k_{n}
\end{array}\right.
$$

We define $\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda), \bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$, where $\lambda$ is a parameter, in the following way.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum \sum\left(k_{1} \lambda+k_{2} \lambda^{2}+\cdots+k_{n} \lambda^{n}\right), \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the inner summation is over all partitions of $Z_{n}$ into $k_{1}$ blocks of cardinality $1, k_{2}$ blocks of cardinality $2, \ldots, k_{n}$ blocks of cardinality $n$; the outer summation is over all $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n}$ satisfying (1.3).

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum \sum\left\{k_{1}(\lambda)_{1}+k_{2} \frac{(\lambda)_{2}}{1!}+\cdots+k_{n} \frac{(\lambda)}{(n-1)!}\right\} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the inner summation is over all permutations of $Z_{n}$ with $k_{1}$ cycles of length $1, k_{2}$ cycles of length $2, \ldots, k_{n}$ cycles of length $n$; the outer summation is over all $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n}$ satisfying (1.3).

We now put

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
S(n, k, \lambda) & =\frac{1}{k} \bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)  \tag{1.6}\\
S_{1}(n, k, \lambda) & =\frac{1}{n} \bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)
\end{align*}\right.
$$

It is evident from (1.4) and (1.5) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
S(n, k, 1)=S(n, k), S_{1}(n, k, 1)=S_{1}(n, k) \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Indeed we shall show that if $\lambda$ is an integer, then $S(n, k, \lambda)$ and $S_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ are also integers. More precisely, we show that, for arbitrary $\lambda$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1}(k)_{j} S(n, j+k-1)\binom{\lambda}{j}  \tag{1.8}\\
& \bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1}\binom{n}{j}(\lambda)_{j} S_{1}(n-j, k-1) \tag{1.9}
\end{align*}
$$

We obtain recurrences and generating functions for both $S(n, k, \lambda)$ and $S_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$. Simpler results hold for the functions

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
R(n, k, \lambda) & =\bar{S}(n, k+1, \lambda)+S(n, k)  \tag{1.10}\\
R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) & =\bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda)+S_{1}(n, k)
\end{align*}\right.
$$

For example, we have the recurrences

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
R(n+1, k, \lambda) & =R(n, k-1, \lambda)+(k+\lambda) R(n, k, \lambda)  \tag{1.11}\\
R_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda) & =R_{1}(n, k-1, \lambda)+(n+\lambda) R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)
\end{align*}\right.
$$

and the orthogonality relations

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{j=0}^{n} R(n, j, \lambda) \cdot(-1)^{j-k_{R_{1}}(j, k, \lambda)}  \tag{1.12}\\
& =\sum_{j=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-j} R_{1}(n, j, \lambda) R(j, k, \lambda)= \begin{cases}1 & (n=k) \\
0 & (n \neq k)\end{cases}
\end{align*}
$$

For $\lambda=0$ and $\lambda=1$, (1.11) and (1.12) reduce to familiar formulas for $S(n, k)$ and $S_{1}(n, k)$.

The definitions (1.4) and (1.5) furnish combinatorial interpretations of $\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)$ and $\bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ when $\lambda$ is arbitrary. For $\lambda$ a nonnegative integer, the recurrences (1.11) suggest combinatorial interpretations for $R(n, k, \lambda)$ and $R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ that generalize the interpretation of $S(n, k)$ and $S_{1}(n, k)$ described above. For the statement of the generalized interpretations, see Section 7 below.
2. THE FUNCTION $\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)$

Let $n, k$ be positive integers, $n \geq k$, and $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n}$ nonnegative such that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
k=k_{1}+k_{2}+\cdots+k_{n}  \tag{2.1}\\
n=k_{1}+2 k_{2}+\cdots+n k_{n}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Put

$$
\begin{equation*}
S\left(n ; k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n} ; \lambda\right)=\sum\left(k_{1} \lambda+k_{2} \lambda^{2}+\cdots+k_{n} \lambda^{n}\right), \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the summation is over all partitions of $Z_{n}=1,2, \ldots, n$ into $k_{1}$ blocks of cardinality $1, k_{2}$ blocks of cardinality $2, \ldots, k_{n}$ blocks of cardinality $n$. Then we have (compare [2, p. 75]):

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots} S\left(n ; k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots ; \lambda\right) \frac{y_{1}^{k_{1}} y_{2}^{k_{2}} \cdots}{k_{1}!k_{2}!\cdots} \\
= & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots}\left(k_{1} \lambda+k_{2} \lambda^{2}+\cdots\right) \frac{n!}{1!^{k_{1}} 2!!^{k_{2}} \cdots} \frac{y_{1}^{k_{1}} y_{2}^{k_{2}} \cdots}{k_{1}!k_{2}!\cdots} \\
= & \left(\frac{y_{1} \lambda x}{1!}+\frac{y_{2} \lambda^{2} x^{2}}{2!}+\cdots\right) \exp \left\{\frac{y_{1} x}{1!}+\frac{y_{2} x^{2}}{2!}+\cdots\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $y_{1}=y_{2}=\cdots=y$, the extreme right member becomes

$$
y\left(e^{\lambda x}-1\right) \exp \left\{y\left(e^{x}-1\right)\right\}
$$

Hence, we get the generating function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n, k} \bar{S}(n, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=y\left(e^{\lambda x}-1\right) \exp \left\{y\left(e^{x}-1\right)\right\} \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n, k} S(n, k) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=\exp \left\{y\left(e^{x}-1\right)\right\} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the right-hand side of (2.3) is equal to

$$
y \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{\lambda^{m} x^{m}}{m!} \sum_{n, k} S(n, k) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}
$$

and therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{m=1}^{n-k+1}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} S(n-m, k-1) . \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that, for $\lambda=1$, (2.3) reduces to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n, k} \bar{S}(n, k, 1) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k} & =y(e-1) \exp \left\{y\left(e^{x}-1\right)\right\}=y \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \exp \left\{y\left(e^{x}-1\right)\right\} \\
& =\sum_{n, k} k S(n, k) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}, \text { by }(2.4)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, we again get

$$
\bar{S}(n, k, 1)=k S(n, k) .
$$

By (1.2),

$$
\lambda^{m}=\sum_{j=0}^{m} S(m, j) j!\binom{\lambda}{j}
$$

Thus, (2.5) becomes

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda) & =\sum_{m=1}^{n-k+1}\binom{n}{m} S(n-m, k-1) \sum_{j=1}^{m} S(m, j) j!\binom{\lambda}{j} \\
& =\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1} j!\binom{\lambda}{j} \sum_{m=j}^{n}\binom{n}{m} S(m, j) S(n-m, k-1) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The inner sum is equal to

$$
\binom{j+k-1}{j} S(n, j+k-1),
$$

so that

$$
\begin{align*}
\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda) & =\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1} j!\binom{\lambda}{j}\binom{j+k-1}{j} S(n, j+k-1)  \tag{2.6}\\
& =\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1}(k)_{j} S(n, j+k-1)\binom{\lambda}{j}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence,
(2.7) $S(n, k, \lambda)=\frac{1}{k} \bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=1}^{n-k+1}(k+1)_{j-1} S(n, j+k-1)\binom{\lambda}{j}$.

Thus, for $\lambda$ an integer, $S(n, k, \lambda)$ is an integer. For example, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& S(n, k, 1)=S(n, k) \\
& S(n, k, 2)=2 S(n, k)+(k+1) S(n, k+1) \\
& S(n, k, 3)=3 S(n, k)+3(k+1) S(n, k+2) .
\end{aligned}
$$

It follows readily from (2.7) that

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{t=0}^{m}(-1)^{t}\binom{m}{t} S(n, k, \lambda-t)  \tag{2.8}\\
= & \sum_{j=m}^{n-k+1}(k+1)_{j-1} S(n, j+k-1)\binom{\lambda-m}{j-m}, \quad(m \geq 1) .
\end{align*}
$$

This result holds for all $\lambda$. However, if $\lambda$ is a positive integer, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{t=0}^{\lambda}(-1)^{t}\binom{\lambda}{t} S(n, k, \lambda-t)=(k+1)_{\lambda-1} S(n, \lambda+k-1), \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{t=0}^{\lambda+1}(-1)^{t}\binom{\lambda+1}{t} S(n, k, \lambda-t)  \tag{2.10}\\
&= \sum_{j=\lambda+1}^{n-k+1}(-1)^{j-\lambda-1}(k+1)_{j-1} S(n, j+k-1) . \\
& 3 . \quad \text { THE FUNCTION } R(n, k, \lambda)
\end{align*}
$$

It is convenient to define

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, \lambda)=\bar{S}(n, k+1, \lambda)+S(n, k) \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, (2.5) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{m=0}^{n-k}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} S(n-m, k) \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

while (2.7) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=0}^{n-k}(k+1)_{j} S(n, j+k)\binom{\lambda}{j} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Multiplying (3.2) by $k!\binom{y}{k}$ and summing over $k$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} k!\binom{y}{k} R(n, k, \lambda) & =\sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} \sum_{k=0}^{n-m} S(n-m, k) y(y-1) \cdots(y-k+1) \\
& =\sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} y^{n-m}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} k!\binom{y}{k} R(n, k, \lambda)=(y+\lambda)^{n} . \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from (3.4) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k=0}^{n} k!\binom{y}{k} R(n, k, \lambda)=e^{x(y+\lambda)} . \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

To obtain a recurrence for $R(n, k, \lambda)$, take

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} k!\binom{y}{k}(R(n+1, k, \lambda)-\lambda R(n, k, \lambda)) & =(y+\lambda)^{n+1}-\lambda(y+\lambda)^{n} \\
& =y(y+\lambda)^{n}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
k!\binom{y}{k} y=(k+1)!\binom{y}{k+1}+k \cdot k!\binom{y}{k}
$$

it is clear that (3.4) gives

$$
R(n+1, k, \lambda)-\lambda R(n, k, \lambda)=k R(n, k, \lambda)+R(n, k-1, \lambda),
$$

that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n+1, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+k) R(n, k, \lambda)+R(n, k-1, \lambda) . \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

An equivalent result is
(3.7) $\bar{S}(n+1, k+1, \lambda)=(\lambda+k) \bar{S}(n, k+1, \lambda)+\bar{S}(n, k, \lambda)+S(n, k)$.

To get an explicit formula for $R(n, k, \lambda)$ we recall that

$$
S(n, k)=\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j} j^{n} .
$$

Thus, by (3.2),

$$
R(n, k, \lambda)=\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{m=0}^{n-k}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j} j^{n-m} .
$$

For $n-k<m \leq n$, the inner sum vanishes, so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
R(n, k, \lambda) & =\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j} j^{n-m} \\
& =\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j} \sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} j^{n-m} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, \lambda)=\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j}(\lambda+j)^{n}=\frac{1}{k!} \Delta^{k} \lambda^{n} . \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows from (3.8) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n=k}^{\infty} R(n, k, \lambda) \frac{z^{n}}{n!}=\frac{1}{k!} e^{\lambda z}\left(e^{z}-1\right)^{k} \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

in agreement with previous results. Also, since

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{k!} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} z^{n} \sum_{j=0}^{k}(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j}(\lambda+j)^{n}=\frac{1}{k!} \sum_{j=0}^{k} \frac{(-1)^{k-j}\binom{k}{j}}{1-(\lambda+j) z} \\
&=\frac{z^{k}}{(1-\lambda z)(1-(\lambda+1) z) \cdots(1-(\lambda+k) z)}
\end{aligned}
$$

we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} R(n, k, \lambda) z^{n}=\frac{z^{k}}{(1-\lambda z)(1-(\lambda+1) z) \ldots(1-(\lambda+k) z)} \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We also note that (3.9) implies the "addition theorem":

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, j+k, \lambda+\mu)=\binom{j+k}{j}^{-1} \sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} R(m, j, \lambda) R(n-m, k, \mu) \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

By the recurrence (3.6) together with $R(0,0, \lambda)=1$, or by means of (3.8), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, 0, \lambda)=\lambda^{n}, \quad R(n, n, \lambda)=1 \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, if we put

$$
x^{n}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} \bar{R}(n, k, \lambda)(x-\lambda)(x-\lambda-1) \cdots(x-\lambda-k+1),
$$

then

$$
\bar{R}(n+1, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+k) \bar{R}(n, k, \lambda)+\bar{R}(n, k-1, \lambda),
$$

so that $\bar{R}(n, k, \lambda)=R(n, k, \lambda)$. Thus, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{n}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} R(n, k, \lambda)(y-\lambda)(y-\lambda-1) \cdots(y-\lambda-k+1) \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

or, replacing $y$ by $-y$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{n}=\sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda)(y+\lambda)_{k} \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

This, of course, is equivalent to (3.4).
It is clear from (3.8) or (3.13) that
(3.15)

$$
R(n, k, 0)=S(n, k)
$$

For $\lambda=1$, since $\bar{S}(n, k, 1)=k S(n, k)$, then by (3.1)

$$
R(n, k, 1)=(k+1) S(n, k+1)+S(n, k)
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, 1)=S(n+1, k+1) \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

The function

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(n, \lambda)=\sum_{k=0}^{n} R(n, k, \lambda) \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

evidently reduces, for $\lambda=0$, to the Bell number [1, p. 210]

$$
B(n)=\sum_{k=0}^{n} S(n, k)
$$

A few formulas may be noted. It follows from (3.2) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(n, \lambda)=\sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} B(n-m) \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

A1so, by (3.9), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B(n, \lambda) \frac{z^{n}}{n!}=e^{\lambda z} \exp \left(e^{z}-1\right) \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

which, indeed, is implied by (3.18).

Differentiation of (3.19) gives

$$
\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} B(n+1, \lambda) \frac{z^{n}}{n!}=\lambda e^{\lambda z} \exp \left(e^{z}-1\right)+e^{(\lambda+1) z} \exp \left(e^{z}-1\right)
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{align*}
B(n+1, \lambda) & =\lambda B(n, \lambda)+B(n, \lambda+1)  \tag{3.20}\\
& =B(n, \lambda)+\sum_{m=0}^{n}\binom{n}{m} B(m, \lambda) .
\end{align*}
$$

Iteration of the first half of (3.20) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(n+m, \lambda)=\sum_{j=0}^{m} \frac{1}{j!} \Delta^{j} \lambda^{m} \cdot B(n, \lambda+j) \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

as can be proved by induction on $m$. Incidentally, by (3.8), (3.21) can be written in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(n+m, \lambda)=\sum_{j=0}^{m} R(m, j, \lambda) B(n, \lambda+j) \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

To anticipate the first result in Section 6, the inverse of (3.22) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
B(n, \lambda+m)=\sum_{j=0}^{m}(-1)^{m-j} R_{1}(m, j, \lambda) B(n+j, \lambda), \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{1}(m, j, \lambda)$ is defined by (5.1).

$$
{ }^{*} \quad *
$$

Returning to (3.9), note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n=k}^{\infty} R(n, k, \lambda+1) \frac{z^{n}}{n!} & =\frac{1}{k!} e^{(\lambda+1) z}\left(e^{z}-1\right)^{k} \\
& =\frac{1}{k!} e^{\lambda z}\left(e^{z}-1\right)^{k+1}+\frac{1}{k!} e^{\lambda z}\left(e^{z}-1\right)^{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies
(3.24) $R(n, k, \lambda+1)=(k+1) R(n, k+1, \lambda)+R(n, k, \lambda)$.

More generally, since

$$
e^{m z}=\left(\left(e^{z}-1\right)+1\right)^{m}=\sum_{j=0}^{m}\binom{m}{j}\left(e^{z}-1\right)^{j}
$$

we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(n, k, \lambda+m)=\sum_{j=0}^{m}\binom{m}{j}(k+1)_{j} R(n, k+j, \lambda) \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

We may also write (3.24) in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\lambda} R(n, k, \lambda)=(k+1) R(n, k+1, \lambda), \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Delta_{\lambda}$ is the finite difference operator. Iteration of (3.26) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\lambda}^{m} R(n, k, \lambda)=(k+1)_{m} R(n, k+m, \lambda) \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

4. THE FUNCTION $\bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$

Corresponding to (2.2), we define

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{1}\left(n ; k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n} ; \lambda\right)=k_{1}(\lambda)_{1}+k_{2} \frac{(\lambda)_{2}}{1!}+\cdots+k_{n} \frac{(\lambda)_{n}}{(n-1)!} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the inner summation is over all permutations of $Z_{n}$,

$$
n=k_{1}+2 k_{2}+\cdots+n k_{n}
$$

with $k_{1}$ cycles of length $1, k_{2}$ cycles of length $2, \ldots, k_{n}$ cycles of length $n$. Then (compare [2, p. 68]), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots} S_{1}\left(n ; k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n} ; \lambda\right) \frac{y_{1}^{k_{1}} y_{2}^{k_{2}} \cdots}{k_{1}!k_{2}!\cdots} \\
& =\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots} k_{1}(\lambda)_{1}+k_{2} \frac{(\lambda)_{2}}{1!}+\cdots+k_{n} \frac{(\lambda)_{n}}{(n-1)!}\left\{\frac{n!}{1^{k_{1}} 2^{k_{2}} \ldots n^{k_{n}}}\right\} \frac{y_{1}^{k_{1}} y_{2}^{k_{2}} \cdots}{k_{1}!k_{2}!\cdots} \\
& =\left\{\frac{(\lambda)_{1}}{1!} y_{1} x+\frac{(\lambda)_{2}}{2!} y_{2} x^{2}+\frac{(\lambda)_{3}}{3!} y_{3} x^{3}+\cdots\right\} \exp \left\{y_{1} x+\frac{1}{2} y_{2} x^{2}+\frac{1}{3} y_{3} x^{3}+\cdots\right\} . \\
& \text { For } y_{1}=y_{2}=\cdots y, \text { the extreme right member becomes } \\
& y\left((1-x)^{-\lambda}-1\right)(1-x)^{-y} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n, k} \bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=y\left((1-x)^{-\lambda}-1\right)(1-x)^{-y} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum S_{1}\left(n ; k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n} ; \lambda\right), \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the summation on the right is over all nonnegative $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots, k_{n}$ satisfying $n=k_{1}+2 k_{2}+\cdots+n k_{n}$.

Since (see [2, p. 71]),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n, k} S_{1}(n, k) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=(1-x)^{-y} \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

it follows from (4.2) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{n, k} \bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=\sum_{n, k} S_{1}(n, m) \frac{x^{n}}{n!}\left((\lambda+y)^{m}-y^{m}\right) \\
= & \sum_{n, m} S_{1}(n, m) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} \sum_{k=0}^{m-1}\binom{m}{k} \lambda^{m-k} y^{k}=\sum_{n, k} \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k} \sum_{m=k+1}^{n}\binom{m}{k} \lambda^{m-k} S_{1}(n, m) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda)=\sum_{j=1}^{n-k}\binom{j+k}{j} \lambda^{j} S_{1}(n, j+k) . \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the next place, it also follows from (4.2) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{n, k} \bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k} & =\left((1-x)^{-\lambda}-1\right)(1-x)^{-y} \\
& =\sum_{m=1}^{\infty}(\lambda)_{m} \frac{x^{m}}{m!} \sum_{n, k} S_{1}(n, k) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

Equating coefficients, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda) & =\sum_{m=1}^{n-k}\binom{n}{m}(\lambda)_{m} S_{1}(n-m, k) \\
& =\sum_{m=1}^{n-k} \frac{(\lambda)_{m}}{m!} n(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) S_{1}(n-m, k)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda) & =\frac{1}{n} \bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda)  \tag{4.7}\\
& =\sum_{m=1}^{n-k} \frac{(\lambda)_{m}}{m!}(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) S_{1}(n-m, k) .
\end{align*}
$$

It follows at once from (4.7) that, for $\lambda$ integral, $S_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda)$ is also integral.

It is evident from (4.1) and (4.3) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{S}_{1}(n, k, 1)=n S_{1}(n, k) . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, for example, (4.5) and (4.6) yield

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=1}^{n-k}\binom{j+k}{j} S_{1}(n, j+k)=n S_{1}(n, k+1) \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{m=1}^{n-k} n(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) S_{1}(n-m, k)=n S_{1}(n, k+1), \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively.

$$
\text { 5. THE FUNCTION } R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)
$$

We define the function $R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ by means of

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\bar{S}_{1}(n, k+1, \lambda)+S_{1}(n, k) . \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, by (4.5),

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=0}^{n-k}\binom{j+k}{j} \lambda^{j} S_{1}(n, j+k) \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and by (4.6),

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{I}(n, k, \lambda) & =\sum_{m=0}^{n-k}\binom{n}{m}(\lambda)_{m} S_{I}(n-m, k)  \tag{5.3}\\
& =\sum_{m=0}^{n-k} \frac{(\lambda)_{m}}{m!} n(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) S_{1}(n-m, k)
\end{align*}
$$

It is also evident from (4.2) and (4.4) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{n, k} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=(1-x)^{-\lambda-y} \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiation of (5.4) with respect to $x$ gives

$$
\sum_{n, k} R_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=(\lambda+y)(1-x)^{-\lambda-y-1},
$$

so that

$$
(1-x) \sum_{n, k} R_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=(\lambda+y) \sum_{n, k} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k} .
$$

Equating coefficients, we get

$$
R_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda)=n R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\lambda R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)+R_{1}(n, k=1, \lambda)
$$

that is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+n) R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)+R_{1}(n, k-1, \lambda) . \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

It follows at once from (5.5) and $R_{1}(0,0, \lambda)=1$ that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, 0, \lambda)=(\lambda)_{n}, \quad R_{1}(n, n \lambda)=1 \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, taking $y=1$ in (5.4), we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+1)_{n} \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

More generally, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) y^{k}=(\lambda+y)_{n} \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Clearly, (5.5) is implied by (5.8).
It is clear from (5.4) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, 0)=S_{1}(n, k) . \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $\lambda=1$, we have, by (4.8) and (5.1),

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, 1)=S_{1}(n+1, k+1) . \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

These formulas may be compared with (3.15) and (3.16).
In view of (5.10), (5.2) and (5.3) reduce to

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{1}(n+1, k+1)=\sum_{j=0}^{n-k}\binom{j+k}{j} S_{1}(n, j+k), \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
S_{1}(n+1, k+1)=\sum_{m=0}^{n-k} n(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) S_{1}(n-m, k) . \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is not difficult to give direct proofs of (5.11) and (5.12).
Returning to (5.4), note that

$$
(1-x) \sum_{n, k} R_{1}(n, \quad k, \lambda+1) \frac{x^{n}}{n!} y^{k}=(1-x)^{-\lambda-y}
$$

This gives
(5.13) $\quad R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=R_{1}(n, k, \lambda+1)-n R_{1}(n-1, k, \lambda+1)$, and generally,

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=\sum_{j=0}^{m}(-1)^{j}\binom{m}{j} n(n-1) \cdots(n-j+1) R_{1}(n-j, k, \lambda+m) . \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The inverse of (5.14) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{1}(n, k, \lambda+m)=\sum_{j=0}^{n}\binom{n}{j}(m)_{j} R_{1}(n-j, k, \lambda) . \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

We may write (5.13) in the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\lambda} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=n R_{1}(n-1, k, \lambda+1) . \tag{5.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Iteration gives
(5.17) $\Delta_{\lambda}^{m} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=n(n-1) \cdots(n-m+1) R_{1}(n-m, k, \lambda+m)$.

## 6. ORTHOGONALITY RELATIONS

Comparing (5.8) with (3.14), we have immediately the orthogonality relations

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda) R_{1}(k, j, \lambda)  \tag{6.1}\\
= & \sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} R(k, j, \lambda)=\delta_{n, j},
\end{align*}
$$

the Kronecker delta.
It is of some interest to give a proof of (6.1) making use of (3.2) and (5.2). We have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda) R_{1}(k, j, \lambda) \\
= & \sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} \sum_{m=0}^{n-k}\binom{n}{m} \lambda^{m} S(n-m, k) \sum_{t=0}^{k-j}\binom{j+t}{t} \lambda^{t} S_{1}(k, k+t) \\
= & \sum_{m=0}^{n} \sum_{t=0}^{n-j}(-1)^{m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{j+t}{t} \lambda^{m+t} \sum_{k=0}^{n-m}(-1)^{n-m-k} S(n-m, k) S_{1}(k, j+t) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The inner sum is equal to 1 if $n-m=j+t$, and vanishes otherwise. Thus, we have

$$
\lambda^{n-j} \sum_{m=0}^{n}(-1)^{m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{n-m}{j}=\lambda^{n-j} \sum_{m=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{m}{j}=\delta_{n, j}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda) R_{1}(k, j, \lambda)=\delta_{n, j} \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

As for the second half of (6.1), we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \lambda) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} R(k, j, \lambda) \\
= & \sum_{k=0}^{n} \sum_{t=0}^{n-k}\binom{t+k}{t} \lambda^{t} S_{1}(n, t+k) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} \sum_{m=0}^{k-j}\binom{k}{m} \lambda^{m} S(k-m, j) \\
= & \sum_{k=0}^{n} \sum_{t=k}^{n}\binom{t}{k} \lambda^{t-k} S_{1}(n, t) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} \sum_{m=j}^{k}\binom{k}{m} \lambda^{k-m} S(m, j) \\
= & \sum_{t=0}^{n} \sum_{m=j}^{n}(-1)^{t-j} \lambda^{t-m} S_{1}(n, t) S(m, j) \sum_{k=0}^{t}(-1)^{t-k}\binom{t}{k}\binom{k}{m} \\
= & \sum_{t=0}^{n} \sum_{m=j}^{n}(-1)^{t-j} \lambda^{t-m} S_{1}(n, t) S(m, j) \delta_{t, m} \\
= & \sum_{t=j}^{n}(-1)^{t-j} S_{1}(n, t) S(t, j)=\delta_{n, j} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This, together with (6.2), completes the proof of (6.1).
The proof of (6.2) above suggests a more general result. As in the above proof, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda) R_{1}(k, j, \mu) & =\sum_{m=0}^{n} \sum_{t=0}^{n-j}(-1)^{m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{j+t}{j} \lambda^{m} \mu^{t} \delta_{n-m, j+t} \\
& =\sum_{m=0}^{n}(-1)^{m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{n-m}{j} \lambda^{m} \mu^{n-m-j} \\
& =\sum_{m=j}^{n}(-1)^{n-m}\binom{n}{m}\binom{m}{j} \lambda^{n-m} \mu^{m-j} \\
& =\binom{n}{j} \sum_{m=1}^{n}(-1)^{n-m}\binom{n-j}{m-j} \lambda^{n-m} \mu^{m-j} \\
& =(-1)^{n-j}\binom{n}{j} \sum_{m=0}^{n-j}(-1)^{m}\binom{n-j}{m} \lambda^{n-j-m} \mu^{m}
\end{aligned}
$$

and therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n}(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda) R_{1}(k, j, \mu)=\binom{n}{j}(\mu-\lambda)^{n-j} . \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $\mu=\lambda$, (6.3) reduces to (6.2).
In the next place

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \mu) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} R(k, j, \lambda) \\
= & \sum_{k=0}^{n} \sum_{t=k}^{n}\binom{t}{k} \mu^{t-k} S_{1}(n, t) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} \sum_{m=j}^{k}\binom{k}{m} \lambda^{k-m} S(m, j) \\
= & \sum_{t=0}^{n} \sum_{m=j}^{n}(-1)^{t-j}\binom{t}{m} S_{1}(n, t) S(m, j) \sum_{k=m}^{t}(-1)^{t-k}\binom{t-m}{k-m} \mu^{t-k} \lambda^{k-m} \\
= & \sum_{t=0}^{n} \sum_{m=j}^{t}(-1)^{t-j}\binom{t}{m} S_{1}(n, t) S(m, j)(\lambda-\mu)^{t-m}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $U(n, j)$ denote this sum. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{j=0}^{n}(-1)^{j} U(n, j) j!\binom{x}{j} & =\sum_{t=0} \sum_{m=0}(-1)^{t}\binom{t}{m} S_{1}(n, t)(\lambda-\mu)^{t-m} \sum_{j=0}^{m} S(m, j) j!\binom{x}{j} \\
& =\sum_{t=0}^{n} \sum_{m=0}^{t}(-1)^{t}\binom{t}{m} S_{1}(n, t)(\lambda-\mu)^{t-m} x^{m} \\
& =\sum_{t=0}^{n}(-1)^{t} S_{1}(n, t)(x+\lambda-\mu)^{t} \\
& =(-1)^{n}(x+\lambda-\mu)(x+\lambda-\mu-1) \cdots(x+\lambda-\mu-n+1)
\end{aligned}
$$

Replacing $x$ by $-x$, this becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{j=0}^{n} U(n, j)(x)_{j}=(x-\lambda+\mu)_{n} \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
(x+y)_{n}=\sum_{j=0}^{n}\binom{n}{j}(x)_{j}(y)_{n-j}
$$

it follows from (6.4) that

$$
U(n, j)=\binom{n}{j}(\mu-\lambda)_{n-j}
$$

Therefore, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k=0}^{n} R_{1}(n, k, \mu) \cdot(-1)^{k-j} R(k, j, \lambda)=\binom{n}{j}(\mu-\lambda)_{n-j} \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

This result may be compared with (6.3). If we define matrices
and

$$
M=\left[(-1)^{n-k} R(n, k, \lambda)\right] \quad(n, k=0,1,2, \ldots),
$$

$$
M_{1}=\left[R_{1}(n, k, \mu)\right] \quad(n, k=0,1,2, \ldots),
$$

then (6.3) and (6.5) become
$(6.3)^{\prime}$
and
$M M_{1}=\left[\binom{n}{k}(\lambda-\mu)^{n-k}\right]$,
$(6.5)^{\prime}$
$M_{1} M=\left[\binom{n}{k}(\mu-\lambda)_{n-k}\right]$,
respectively.

## 7. COMBINATORIAL INTERPRETATION OF $R(n, k, \lambda)$ AND $R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$

Let $\lambda$ be a nonnegative integer and let $B_{1}, B_{2}, \ldots, B_{\lambda}$ denote $\lambda$ open boxes. Let $P(n, k, \lambda)$ denote the number of partitions of $Z_{n}=\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$ into $k$ blocks with the understanding that an arbitrary number of the elements of $Z_{n}$ may be placed in any number (possibly none) of the boxes. For brevity, we shall call these " $\lambda$-partitions." Clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(n, k, 0)=S(n, k) . \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

To evaluate $P(n, 0, \lambda)$, we place $x_{1}$ elements of $Z_{n}$ in $B_{1}, x_{2}$ in $B_{2}, \ldots$, $x_{\lambda}$ in $B_{\lambda}$. Thus,

$$
P(n, 0, \lambda)=\sum_{x_{1}+x_{2}+\cdots+x_{\lambda}} \frac{n!}{x_{1}!x_{2}!\ldots x_{\lambda}!} .
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(n, 0, \lambda)=\lambda^{n} . \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Also, clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(0, k, \lambda)=\delta_{0, k} . \tag{7.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

To get a recurrence for $P(n, k, \lambda)$, we consider the effect of adding the element $n+1$ to a $\lambda$-partition of $Z_{n}$ into $k$ blocks. The added element may be placed in any of the blocks or any of the boxes without changing the value of $k$. On the other hand, if it constitutes an additional block, then of course the number of blocks becomes $k+1$. Thus, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(n+1, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+k) P(n, k, \lambda)+P(n, k-1, \lambda) . \tag{7.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since

$$
P(0, k, \lambda)=R(0, k, \lambda)=\delta_{0, k},
$$

comparison of (7.4) with (3.6) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
P(n, k, \lambda)=R(n, k, \lambda) . \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, $R(n, k, \lambda)$ is equal to the number of $\lambda$-partitions of $Z_{n}$ into k blocks.

Turning next to $R(n, k, \lambda)$, again let $B_{1}, B_{2}, \ldots, B_{\lambda}$ denote $\lambda$ open boxes. Let $P_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ denote the number of permutations of $Z_{n}$ with $k$ cycles with the understanding that an arbitrary number of the elements of $Z_{n}$ may be placed in any number (possibly none) of the boxes and then permuted in all possible ways in each box. For brevity, we call these " $\lambda$-permutations."

Clearly,
(7.6)

$$
P_{1}(n, k, 0)=S_{1}(n, k)
$$

To evaluate $P(n, 0, \lambda)$, note that $P(1,0, \lambda)=\lambda$ and

$$
P(n+1,0, \lambda)=(\lambda+n) P(n, 0, \lambda),
$$

since the element $n+1$ may occupy any one of the $n+\lambda$ positions. Thus,

$$
(7.7)
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{1}(n, 0, \lambda)=(\lambda)_{n} \tag{7.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
P_{1}(0, k, \lambda)=\delta_{0, k} .
$$

A recurrence for $P_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ is obtained using the method of proof of (7.4); however, there are now $\lambda+n$ possible positions for the element $n+1$. Thus, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{1}(n+1, k, \lambda)=(\lambda+n) P_{1}(n, k, \lambda)+P_{1}(n, k-1, \lambda) . \tag{7.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Comparison of (7.9) with (5.5) gives
$P_{1}(n, k, \lambda)=R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$.
Hence, $R_{1}(n, k, \lambda)$ is equal to the number of $\lambda$-permutations of $Z_{n}$ with $k$ cycles.

We remark that (7.5) can also be proved using (3.2) and that (7.10) can be proved using (5.3).

Finally, we note that the generalized Bell number defined by (3.17),

$$
B(n, \lambda)=\sum_{k=0}^{n} R(n, k, \lambda),
$$

is equal to the total number of $\lambda$-partitions of $Z_{n}$.
REFERENCES

1. L. Comtet. Advanced Combinatorics. Boston: D. Reide1, 1974.
2. J. Riordan. An Introduction to Combinatorial Analysis. New York: Wiley \& Sons, 1958.

## A PROPERTY OF QUASI-ORTHOGONAL POLYNOMIALS

O. R. AINSWORTH

University of Alabama, University, AL 35486
and
JOSEPH E. MORRIS, JR.
Jefferson State Jr. College, Birmingham, AL 35215

We define the simple set of polynomials $\phi_{n}(x)$ to be quasi-orthogonal if

$$
\left(\phi_{n}, \phi_{k}\right)=\int_{a}^{b} \omega(x) \phi_{n}(x) \phi_{k}(x) d x= \begin{cases}A_{n} & \text { if } k=n-1 \\ B_{n} & \text { if } k=n \\ C_{n} & \text { if } k=n+1 \\ 0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

We shall require $A_{n}$ and $C_{n}$ to be nonvanishing. It is to be noted that the $\phi_{n}(x)$ may or may not be orthogonal over some other combination of range $[a, b]$ and weighting function $w(x)$. Consider, for example, if the range is [-1, 1], $w(x)=1+x$, and $\phi_{n}(x)=P_{n}(x)$, the Legendre Polynomial,

$$
\int_{-1}^{1}(1+x) P_{n}(x) P_{m}(x) d x= \begin{cases}\frac{2 n}{(2 n-1)(2 n+1)} & \text { if } m=n-1 \\ \frac{2}{2 n+1} & \text { if } m=n \\ \frac{2(n+1)}{(2 n+1)(2 n+3)} & \text { if } m=n+1 \\ 0 & \text { otherwise. }\end{cases}
$$

Here, $P_{n}$ is quasi-orthogonal, but, of course, if $w(x)=1, P_{n}$ is also orthogonal.

However, the simple set

$$
\psi_{n}=(2 n+1) P_{n}+P_{n-1}
$$

is quasi-orthogonal, but it is not orthogonal with respect to any range and weighting function. This is easily illustrated by noting that:

$$
x \psi_{3}=\frac{4}{9} \psi_{4}+\frac{1}{45} \psi_{3}+\frac{403}{15(45)} \psi_{2}-\frac{133}{(45)^{2}} \psi_{1}-\frac{281}{90(45)} \psi_{0}
$$

Since the $\psi_{n}$ do not satisfy a three-term recursion formula, they, by the converse of Favard's Theorem, are not an orthogonal set, no matter what $w(x)$ or [a, b] is selected. Favard's Theorem and converse are as follows.

Theorem: If the $\psi_{n}(x)$ are a set of simple polynomials which satisfy a threeterm recursion formula, $x \psi_{n}=a_{n} \psi_{n+1}+b_{n} \psi_{n}+c_{n} \psi_{n-1}$, then the $\psi_{n}$ are orthogonal with respect to some weighting function $w(x)$ and some range [ $\alpha$, $b$ ] if the integration be considered in the Stieltjes sense.
Converse: If the $\psi_{n}$ are a simple set of polynomials orthogonal with respect to a weighting function $w(x)$ and some range $[\alpha, b]$, then the $\psi_{n}$ satisfy the three-term recursion formula:

$$
x \psi_{n}=a_{n} \psi_{n+1}+b_{n} \psi_{n}+c_{n} \psi_{n-1}
$$

For quasi-orthogonal polynomials, the following property will be satisfied:

Theorem: If $R_{n}(x)$ is a set of simple quasi-orthogonal polynomials over $[a, b]$ with respect to $\omega(x)$, then the necessary and sufficient condition that $R_{n}(x)$ also be orthogonal over some range $[c, d]$ with respect to some weighting function $w_{1}(x)$ is given by the expression:

$$
x R_{n-1}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} c_{k} R_{k}, n \geq 2
$$

$C_{0} \neq 0$ if $n=2$ and $C_{0}=0$ if $n \geq 3$.
Proof: The quasi-orthogonal character of $R_{n}$ leads at once to the set of equations:

$$
\begin{aligned}
&\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n+1}\right)=C_{n}\left(R_{n}, R_{n+1}\right) \\
&\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n}\right)=C_{n-1}\left(R_{n-1}, R_{n}\right)+C_{n}\left(R_{n}, R_{n}\right) \\
&\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n-1}\right)=C_{n-2}\left(R_{n-2}, R_{n-1}\right)+C_{n-1}\left(R_{n-1}, R_{n-1}\right)+C\left(R, R_{n-1}\right) \\
&\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n-2}\right)=C_{n-3}\left(R_{n-3}, R_{n-2}\right)+C_{n-2}\left(R_{n-2}, R_{n-2}\right)+C_{n-1}\left(R_{n-1}, R_{n-2}\right) \\
&\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n-3}\right)=C_{n-4}\left(R_{n-4}, R_{n-3}\right)+C_{n-3}\left(R_{n-3}, R_{n-3}\right)+C_{n-2}\left(R_{n-2}, R_{n-3}\right) \\
& 0=C_{n-5}\left(R_{n-5}, R_{n-4}\right)+C_{n-4}\left(R_{n-4}, R_{n-4}\right)+C_{n-3}\left(R_{n-3}, R_{n-4}\right) \\
& \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \\
& 0=C_{0}\left(R_{0}, R_{1}\right)+C_{1}\left(R_{1}, R_{1}\right)+C_{2}\left(R_{2}, R_{1}\right) \\
& 0=C_{0}\left(R_{0}, R_{0}\right)+C_{1}\left(R_{1}, R_{0}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The zero terms on the right occur, since
and

$$
\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n-4}\right)=\left(R_{n-1}, x R_{n-4}\right)=\left(R_{n-1}, \sum_{k=0}^{n-2} b_{k} R_{k}\right)
$$

$$
\left(R_{n-1}, R_{k}\right)=0 \text { for } k \leq n-3 .
$$

We begin at the bottom of the chain and observe that if $C_{0}=0, C_{1}$ is also 0 . Then the penultimate equation yields $C_{2}=0$. Continuing,

$$
C_{0}=C_{1}=\cdots=C_{n-3}=0
$$

To show $C_{n-2} \neq 0$, note that when $C_{n-2}=0$, the fifth equation of the chain requires:

$$
0=\left(x R_{n-1}, R_{n-3}\right)=\left(R_{n-1}, x R_{n-3}\right)=\left(R_{n-1}, \sum_{k=0}^{n-2} \alpha_{k} R_{k}\right)=a_{n-2}\left(R_{n-1}, R_{n-2}\right)
$$

Now, $\alpha_{k-2} \neq 0$, since from the equation

$$
x R_{n-3}=\sum_{k=0}^{n-2} a_{k} R_{k}
$$

we see that $a_{n-2}=\frac{h_{n-3}}{h_{n-2}}$, where $h_{n-3}$ is the coefficient of $x^{n-3}$ and $h_{n-2}$ is the coefficient of $x^{n-2}$ in $R_{n-2}$. Since the $R_{n}$ are a simple set of polynomials,
these cannot vanish．Therefore，

$$
C_{n-2} \neq 0
$$

So，$C_{0}=0$ implies

$$
x R_{n-1}=C_{n} R_{n}+C_{n-1} R_{n-1}+C_{n-2} R_{n-2}
$$

Hence，by Favard＇s Theorem，these $R_{n}$ must be an orthogonal set with respect to some weighting function $w_{1}(x)$ and some range $[c, d]$ if the integral be considered a Stieltjes integral．

If $C_{0} \neq 0$ ，the $R_{n}$ do not satisfy a three－term recursion formula（unless $n=2$ ）and by applying the contrapositive of the converse，we see that the $R_{n}$ cannot be an orthogonal set with respect to any weighting function and range．

## REFERENCES

1．J．Favard．＂Sur les polynomes de Tchebicheff．＂Comptes Rendus Acad．Sci． Paris 200 （1935）：2052－2053．
2．G．Szego．Orthogonal Polynomials．Colloquim Publication Volume XXIII． New York：The American Mathematical Society， 1939.

来为为为

ON SOME SYSTEMS OF DIOPHANTINE EQUATIONS INCLUDING THE

## ALGEBRAIC SUM OF TRIANGULAR NUMBERS

ANDRZEJ WIȨCKOWSKI
Research Fellow of the Alexander von Homboldt Foundation at the University of Saarbrücken

The natural number of the form

$$
t_{n}=\binom{n+1}{2}=\frac{1}{2} n(n+1)
$$

where $n$ is a natural number，is referred to as the $n$th triangular number． The aim of this work is to give solutions of some equations and systems of equations in triangular numbers．

$$
\text { 1. THE EQUATION } t_{t_{x}}+t_{t_{y}}=t_{t_{z}}
$$

It is well known that the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{z} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

has infinitely many solutions in triangular numbers $t_{x}, t_{y}$ ，and $t_{z}$ ．For ex－ ample，it follows immediately from the formula：

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{(2 n+1) k}+t_{4 t_{n} k+n}=t_{\left(4 t_{n}+1\right) k+n} . \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can ask whether there exists a solution of the equation：

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{t_{x}}+t_{t_{y}}=t_{t_{z}} \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The answer to this question is positive，because there exist two solutions：

$$
t_{t_{59}}+t_{t_{77}}=t_{t_{83}} \quad \text { and } \quad t_{t_{104}}+t_{t_{213}}=t_{t_{216}}
$$

The problem of finding all the solutions to equation (1) above will be solved in a subsequent paper.

## 2. TRIPLES OF TRIANGULAR NUMBERS, THE SUMS OR DIFFERENCES OF ANY TWO OF WHICH ARE ALSO TRIANGULAR NUMBERS

The system of three equations:

$$
\begin{align*}
t_{x}+t_{y} & =t_{u} \\
t_{x}+t_{z} & =t_{v}  \tag{4}\\
t_{y}+2 t_{z} & =t_{q}
\end{align*}
$$

has infinitely many solutions in triangular numbers $t_{x}, t_{y}, t_{z}, t_{u}, t_{v}$, and $t_{q}$. This theorem can be proved by insertion of the following formulas into equations (4):

$$
\begin{align*}
& x=n, \quad y=\frac{1}{2}\left(t_{n}-3\right), \quad z=t_{n}-1 \\
& u=\frac{1}{2}\left(t_{n}+1\right), \quad v=t_{n}, \quad q=\frac{3}{2}\left(t_{n}-1\right), \tag{5}
\end{align*}
$$

where $n$ is a natural number of the form $4 k+1$ or $4 k+2$ for natural $k$.
In particular, putting $n=14$, we have:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
x=14, & y=51, \quad z=104 \\
u=53, & v=105, \quad q=156
\end{array}
$$

Since $t_{q}-t_{z}=t_{156}-t_{104}=t_{116}=t_{w}$, we obtain a solution of the system of equations:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u}, \quad \text { in the numbers: } & t_{14}+t_{51}=t_{53} \\
t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{v}, & t_{14}+t_{104}=t_{105}  \tag{6}\\
t_{y}+t_{z}=t_{w}, & t_{51}+t_{104}=t_{116}
\end{array}
$$

We see that there exists a triple of triangular numbers whose sums in pairs are also triangular numbers. The problem of whether there exist three different triangular numbers, the sum of any two of which is a triangular number was formulated by W. Sierpiński [1].
Theorem: Suppose that $x>y>z$; then each of the systems of equations:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u} \\
& t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{v} \\
& t_{y}+t_{z}=t_{w} \\
& t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u} \\
& t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{v}, \\
& t_{y}-t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, y \neq v \\
& t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}-t_{z}=t_{v}, \\
& t_{y}+t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, y \neq v ;
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{v},  \tag{7.4}\\
& t_{y}+t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, z \neq u ; \\
& t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}-t_{z}=t_{v},  \tag{7.5}\\
& t_{y}+t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, y \neq v, z \neq u ; \\
& t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{v},  \tag{7.6}\\
& t_{y}-t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, y \neq v ; \\
& t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}-t_{z}=t_{v},  \tag{7.7}\\
& t_{y}-t_{z}=t_{w} ; \\
& t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x}-t_{z}=t_{v},  \tag{7.8}\\
& t_{y}-t_{z}=t_{w}, \quad \text { where } x \neq w, y \neq v, z \neq u ;
\end{align*}
$$

has infinitely many solutions in triangular numbers $t_{x}, t_{y}, t_{z}, t_{u}, t_{v}$, and $t_{w}$.
Proof: We prove even more. Each of the following systems of equations has infinitely many solutions in natural numbers $x$ and $y$.

$$
\begin{align*}
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{12 x+2}=t_{20 x+3}, \\
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{9 x+2}=t_{y} \text {, }  \tag{8.1}\\
& t_{12 x+2}+t_{9 x+2}=t_{15 x+3} ; \\
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{13 x+2}=t_{y}, \\
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{12 x+2}=t_{20 x+3},  \tag{8.2}\\
& t_{13 x+2}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{5 x} ; \\
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{12 x+2}=t_{20 x+3}, \\
& t_{16 x+2}-t_{9 x+2}=t_{y} \text {, }  \tag{8.3}\\
& t_{12 x+2}+t_{9 x+2}=t_{15 x+3} ; \\
& t_{15 x+3}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{9 x+2}, \quad t_{13 x+2}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{5 x}, \\
& t_{15 x+3}+t_{5 x}=t_{y} \text {, or } t_{13 x+2}+t_{9 x+2}=t_{y} \text {, }  \tag{8.4}\\
& t_{12 x+2}+t_{5 x}=t_{13 x+2}, \quad t_{12 x+2}+t_{9 x+2}=t_{15 x+3} ;
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& t_{15 x+3}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{9 x+2} \\
& t_{15 x+3}-t_{5 x}=t_{y}  \tag{8.5}\\
& t_{12 x+2}+t_{5 x}=t_{13 x+2} \\
& t_{16 x+2}-t_{13 x+2}=t_{y} \\
& t_{16 x+2}+t_{12 x+2}=t_{20 x+3}  \tag{8.6}\\
& t_{13 x+2}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{5 x} \\
& t_{52 x+2}+t_{39 x+2}=t_{65 x+3} \\
& t_{52 x+2}-t_{36 x+2}=t_{y}  \tag{8.7}\\
& t_{39 x+2}-t_{36 x+2}=t_{15 x} \\
& t_{15 x+3}-t_{13 x+2}=t_{y} \\
& t_{15 x+3}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{9 x+2}  \tag{8.8}\\
& t_{13 x+2}-t_{12 x+2}=t_{5 x}
\end{align*}
$$

The systems of equations (8.1)-(8.8) are, respectively, equivalent to the following equations, for which there exist initial solutions given below:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 337 x^{2}+125 x-y^{2}-y=-12, x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=3 ;  \tag{9.1}\\
& 425 x^{2}+145 x-y^{2}-y=-12, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=3 \text {; }  \tag{9.2}\\
& 175 x^{2}+35 x-y^{2}-y=0, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=0 ;  \tag{9.3}\\
& 250 x^{2}+110 x-y^{2}-y=-12, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=3 ;  \tag{9.4}\\
& 200 x^{2}+100 x-y^{2}-y=-12, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=3 ;  \tag{9.5}\\
& 87 x^{2}+15 x-y^{2}-y=0, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=0 ;  \tag{9.6}\\
& 1408 x^{2}+80 x-y^{2}-y=0, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=0 ;  \tag{9.7}\\
& 56 x^{2}+40 x-y^{2}-y=-6, \quad x_{0}=0, \quad y_{0}=2 . \tag{9.8}
\end{align*}
$$

From the theory of Pell's equation (also referred to as Fermat's equation), it follows that if, simultaneously, $k$ and $m$ are natural numbers, $1, n$, and $q$ are integers, then the product $k \cdot m$ is not a square, and if there exists an initial solution of the equation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
k x^{2}+1 x-m y^{2}-n y=q \tag{10}
\end{equation*}
$$

in integers $x_{0}$ and $y_{0}$, where $\left(x_{0}+\frac{1}{2 k}\right)^{2}+\left(y_{0}+\frac{n}{2 m}\right)^{2} \neq 0$, then equation (10) has infinitely many solutions in natural numbers $x$ and $y$. Applying this to equations (9.1)-(9.8) we prove that all the systems of equations (8.1)-(8.8) have infinitely many solutions in natural numbers $x$ and $y$. This theorem is thus proved.

Some years ago, A. Schinzel found the following proof for the statement that there exist infinitely many triples of different triangular numbers for which the sum of any two is a triangular number [private communication from A. Schinzel].

Schinzel's Proof (unpublished): It is well known that the equation

$$
x^{2}-424 y^{2}=1
$$

has infinitely many solutions, where $x \equiv 1$ (mod 106) [in every solution, we have $\pm x \equiv 1(\bmod 106)]$. Putting

$$
\begin{aligned}
& k=5 y-\frac{25}{106}(x-1)-1 \\
& 1=\frac{5}{2}(x-1)-50 y+2
\end{aligned}
$$

we find

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{5 k+4}+t_{9 k+6}=t_{1} \\
& t_{5 k+4}+t_{12 k+9}=t_{13 k+10} \\
& t_{9 k+6}+t_{12 k+9}=t_{15 k+11}
\end{aligned}
$$

3. SYSTEMS OF EQUATIONS INCLUDING THE ALGEBRAIC SUM

AND THE PRODUCT OF TRIANGULAR NUMBERS
W. Sierpiński [1] has asked whether there exists a pair of triangular numbers such that the sum and the product of these numbers are triangular numbers. We have found some such systems of equations for which there exist one or two solutions in triangular numbers, e.g.:

$$
\text { 1. } \begin{align*}
t_{x}-t_{y} & =t_{u}, & t_{x}+t_{y} & =t_{v},
\end{align*} \quad t_{x} t_{y}=t_{w}, ~=t_{118}, t_{14}=t_{23}, \quad t_{18} t_{14}=t_{189} .
$$

(This solution was found by K. Szymiczek [2].)
and

$$
\begin{align*}
& \text { 2. } \quad t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u}, \quad t_{x} t_{y}=t_{v}, \quad\left(t_{x}+1\right) t_{y}=t_{w} \text {, } \\
& t_{9}+t_{13}=t_{16}, \quad t_{9} t_{13}=t_{90},\left(t_{9}+1\right) t_{13}=t_{91} .  \tag{12}\\
& \text { 3. } \quad t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{u}, \quad t_{x} t_{y}=t_{v}, \quad t_{x} / t_{y}-1=t_{w} \text {, } \\
& t_{21}-t_{6}=t_{20}, \quad t_{21} t_{6}=t_{98}, \quad t_{21} / t_{6}-1=t_{4} \text {. }  \tag{13}\\
& 4 . \\
& \text {. } \\
& t_{x}-t_{y}=t_{q}, \quad \quad t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{u}, \\
& t_{x} t_{y}=t_{v}, \quad t_{x} t_{z}=t_{w},  \tag{14}\\
& t_{21}-t_{6}=t_{20}, \quad t_{21}+t_{35}=t_{41} \text {, } \\
& t_{21} t_{6}=t_{98}, \quad t_{21} t_{35}=t_{539}, \\
& t_{63}-t_{38}=t_{50}, t_{63}+t_{219}=t_{228} \text {, } \\
& t_{63} t_{38}=t_{1728}, \quad t_{63} t_{219}=t_{9855} . \\
& \text { 5. } \quad t_{x}+t_{z}=t_{q}, \quad t_{y}-t_{z}=t_{u} \text {, } \\
& t_{x} t_{z}=t_{v}, \quad t_{y} t_{z}=t_{w}, \tag{15}
\end{align*}
$$

5．continued

$$
\begin{aligned}
t_{29}+t_{69} & =t_{75}, \quad t_{168}-t_{69} \\
t_{29} t_{69} & =t_{153}, \\
t_{149}, & t_{168} t_{69}
\end{aligned}=t_{8280} .
$$

6．For the system of equations，

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{x}+t_{y}=t_{u}, \quad t_{x} t_{y}=t_{v}, \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

there exists also the solution：

$$
t_{505}+t_{531}=t_{733}, \quad t_{505} t_{531}=t_{189980^{\circ}}
$$

The author wishes to thank Professor Dr．Andrzej Schinzel for his valu－ able hints and remarks．

## REFERENCES

1．W．Sierpiński．Liczby trójkatne（TrianguZar Numbers）．PZWS Warszawa： Biblioteczka Matematyczna，1962．（In Polish．）
2．K．Szymiczek．＂On Some Diophantine Equations Connected with Triangular Numbers．＂Sekcja Matematyki（Poland）4（1964）：17－22．（Zeszyty Naukowe WSP w Katowicach．）

まれが米

## ON EULER＇S SOLUTION TO A PROBLEM OF DIOPHANTUS－II <br> JOSEPH ARKIN <br> 197 Old Nyack Turnpike，Spring Valley，NY 10977 <br> V．E．HOGGATT，JR． <br> San Jose State University，San Jose，CA 95192 <br> and <br> E．G．STRAUS＊ <br> University of California，Los Angeles，CA 90024 <br> 1．INTRODUCTION

In an earlier paper［1］we considered solutions to a system of equations：

$$
x_{i} x_{j}+1=y_{i j}^{2} ; \quad 1 \leq i<j \leq n .
$$

In this note we look at the generalized problems：

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{i} x_{j}+a=y_{i j}^{2}, \quad a \neq 0 \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

In Section 2 we apply the results of［1］to the solutions of（1．1）．In Section 3 we consider the following problem：Find $n \times 2$ matrices

$$
\left(\begin{array}{llll}
a_{1} & a_{2} & \cdots & a_{n} \\
b_{1} & b_{2} & \cdots & b_{n}
\end{array}\right)
$$

so that $a_{i} b_{j} \pm a_{j} b_{i}= \pm 1$ for all $1 \leq i<j \leq n$ ．In Section 4 we apply the results of Section 3 to get two－parameter families of solutions of（1．1）， linear in $\alpha$ ，for $n=4$ ．

[^1]
## 2. SOLUTIONS

Solutions of

$$
x_{i} x_{3}+a=y_{i 3}^{2} ; \quad i=1,2
$$

where

$$
x_{3}, y_{i 3} \varepsilon R=k\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, \sqrt{x_{1} x_{2}+a}\right]
$$

and $k$ is a field of characteristic $\neq 2 ; x_{1}, x_{2}$ algebraically independent over $k$ 。

We saw in [1] that for $a=1$ the general solution could be represented by
(2.1) $\sqrt{x_{1}} y_{23}+\sqrt{x_{2}} y_{13}= \pm\left(\sqrt{x_{1}} \pm \sqrt{x_{2}}\right)\left(y_{12}+\sqrt{x_{1} x_{2}}\right)^{n} ; n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \ldots$. where $y_{12}=\sqrt{x_{1} x_{2}+a}$. We arrived at (2.1) by solving the Pell's equation, (2.2)

$$
x_{1} y_{23}^{2}-x_{2} y_{13}^{2}=x_{1}-x_{2}
$$

which arises from the elimination of $x_{3}$ between the two equations (1.1). For general $\alpha$, equation (2.2) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1} y_{23}^{2}-x_{2} y_{13}^{2}=a\left(x_{1}-x_{2}\right) \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $a$ is a square in $b$, say $a=b^{2}$, then the solution of (2.3) is entirely analogous to (2.1).
Theorem (2.4): If $a=b^{2}$, then the general solution of (2.3) in $R$ is given by

$$
\sqrt{x_{1} y_{23}}+\sqrt{x_{2} y_{13}}= \pm b\left(\sqrt{x_{1}} \pm \sqrt{x_{2}}\right)\left(\frac{y_{12}+\sqrt{x_{1} x_{2}}}{b}\right)^{n} ; n=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \ldots
$$

Proof: We just take the general solution (2.1) for the case $a=1$ and rename $\overline{x_{i}}$ by $x_{i} / b$ and $y_{i j}$ by $y_{i j} / b$ to get the solution for $a=b^{2}$.

In case $a$ is not a square in $k$, we can use Theorem 2.4 to give the general solution in the extended ring $R^{*}=k^{*}\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, y_{12}\right]$ where $k^{*}=k(\sqrt{a})$. The solutions in $R$ are therefore given by the following.
Theorem (2.5): If $a$ is not a square in $k$, then the general solution of (2.3) in $R$ is given by

$$
\sqrt{x_{1} y_{23}}+\sqrt{x_{2} y_{13}}= \pm\left(\sqrt{x_{1}} \pm \sqrt{x_{2}}\right)\left(y_{12} \pm \sqrt{x_{1} x_{2}}\right)^{2 n+1} a^{-n} ; n=0,1,2, \ldots
$$

For example, if $k=0$ and $a$ is an integer, then either $a= \pm 1$ or the only solution with integral coefficients is

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{3}=x_{1}+x_{2}+2 y_{12}, y_{i 3}=x_{i}+y_{12} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Following [1], we see that in case $a=b^{2}$ we can find

$$
x_{4}, y_{i 4} \in R_{1}=k\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, y_{12}, y_{13}, y_{23}\right]
$$

so that $x_{i} x_{4}+a=y_{i 4}^{2}$. Namely,

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{4} & =x_{1}+x_{2}+x_{3}+2 \frac{x_{1} x_{2} x_{3}}{a}+2 \frac{y_{12} y_{13} y_{23}}{a}  \tag{2.7}\\
y_{i 4} & =\frac{1}{b}\left(x_{i} y_{j k}+y_{i j} y_{i k}\right) ;\{i, j, k\}=\{1,2,3\}
\end{align*}
$$

If $\alpha$ is not a square, then there is no $x_{4}$ element in $R_{1}$ so that $x_{i} x_{4}+\alpha$ are squares in $R_{1}$ for $i=1,2,3$.

The construction in [1] for an $x_{5} \varepsilon K=k\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, y_{12}, y_{13}, y_{23}\right)$ so that $x_{i} x_{5}+a=y_{i 5}^{2} ; i=1,2,3,4$ can be extended in case $a=b^{2}$ but not if $a$ is not a square in $k$.

## 3. ON REAL $n \times 2$ MATRICES SATISFYING $\alpha_{i} b_{j} \pm \alpha_{j} b_{i}= \pm 1$

If we first consider the case where all the $2 \times 2$ determinants are $\pm 1$, then it is clear that we must have $n \leq 3$, since for $n=4$ the 6 determinants $A_{i j}$ satisfy the identity

$$
A_{12} A_{34}+A_{31} A_{24}+A_{23} A_{14}=0
$$

which makes it impossible that all $A_{i j}$ are odd integers. Of course, there are many solutions for $n=3$, for example

$$
\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 1 \\
0 & 1 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

There is no restriction on the size of the matrix if we require only that the permanents of the $2 \times 2$ submatrices are $\pm 1$. In fact, given any $a, b$ so that $2 a b= \pm 1$, then the matrix

$$
a_{1}=a_{2}+\cdots+a_{n}=a ; \quad b_{1}=\ldots=b_{n}=b
$$

obviously has all permanents $\pm 1$.
If we call a matrix admissible when it satisfies $a_{i} b_{j} \pm a_{j} b_{i}= \pm 1$ for all $1 \leq i<j \leq n$, then admissibility is preserved under the following operations.
(i) Change of sign of any element.
(ii) Interchange of the two rows and permutations of columns.
(iii) Multiplication of one row by any nonzero constant and division of the other row by the same constant.
We therefore normalize to consider only matrices with nonnegative entries and without repeated columns. We call such matrices permissible.
Lemma (3.1): A permissible matrix with an entry 0 has no more than three columns.

Proof: We normalize the matrix so that $a_{1}=1, b_{1}=0$. Then

$$
b_{2}=\cdots=b_{n}=1
$$

Thus, if we order the columns by $a_{2} \leq \alpha_{3} \leq \cdots \leq \alpha_{n}$, we get $a_{j} \pm a_{i}=1$ for $2 \leq i<j \leq n$. If $n>3$, this leaves only the possibilities

$$
a_{3}=1-a_{2}, \quad a_{4}=1+a_{2} .
$$

But then, $\alpha_{4}+a_{3}=2$ and $\alpha_{4}-\alpha_{3}=2 \alpha_{2}=1$ leads to $\alpha_{2}=\alpha_{3}=1 / 2$. Thus, $n \leq 3$.

We then assume that all entries are positive, and normalize to the form

$$
\left(\begin{array}{llll}
1 & a_{2} & \cdots & a_{n} \\
b & b_{2} & \cdots & b_{n}
\end{array}\right) \text { with } 1 \leq a_{2} \leq \cdots \leq a_{n}
$$

Then $b_{i}=1+b \alpha_{i}$ or $\left|1-b a_{i}\right|$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { Case 1. } \quad b_{2}=1+b a_{2} . \text { From the equations } \\
& \qquad a_{2}\left|1 \pm b a_{i}\right| \pm\left(1+b a_{2}\right) a_{i}= \pm 1,
\end{aligned}
$$

we get three possibilities:
or

$$
a_{2}\left(1+b a_{i}\right)-a_{i}\left(1+b a_{2}\right)=-1, \quad a_{i}=a_{2}+1
$$

$$
a_{2}\left(1-b a_{i}\right)-a_{i}\left(1+b a_{2}\right)=-1, \quad a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{1+2 b a_{2}}
$$

or

$$
\alpha_{2}\left(b \alpha_{i}-1\right)+\alpha_{i}\left(1+b \alpha_{2}\right)=1, \quad a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{1+2 b \alpha_{2}}
$$

Thus, $n \leq 4$, and for $n=4$ we have

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a_{3}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{1+2 b a_{2}}, & b_{3}=\frac{1-b+b a_{2}}{1+2 b a_{2}} ; \\
a_{4}=a_{2}+1, & b_{4}=1+b+b a_{2}
\end{array}
$$

The equation $a_{3} b_{4} \pm a_{4} b_{3}= \pm 1$ becomes

$$
\left(\alpha_{2}+1\right)\left[\left(1+b+b \alpha_{2}\right) \pm\left(1-b+b \alpha_{2}\right)\right]=1+2 b \alpha_{2},
$$

and hence,

$$
2\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left(1+b \alpha_{2}\right)=1+2 b \alpha_{2},
$$

which is impossible, or

$$
2 b\left(a_{2}+1\right)=1+2 b a_{2}, \quad b=1 / 2
$$

But then $a_{3}=1, b_{3}=1 / 2$ which is not permissible. Thus $n \leq 3$ in this case.
Case 2. $b_{2}=1-b a_{2}$. We get the possibilities:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a_{2}\left(1+b \alpha_{i}\right)-\left(1-b \alpha_{2}\right) \alpha_{i}= \pm 1, & a_{i}=\frac{a_{2} \pm 1}{1-2 b a_{2}} \\
a_{2}\left(1-b \alpha_{i}\right)+\left(1-b \alpha_{2}\right) \alpha_{i}=1, & a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}-1}{2 b a_{2}-1} \\
a_{2}\left(1-b \alpha_{i}\right)-\left(1-b \alpha_{2}\right) \alpha_{i}=-1, & a_{i}=a_{2}+1 \\
a_{2}\left(b a_{i}-1\right)+\left(1-b \alpha_{2}\right) a_{i}=1, & a_{i}=a_{2}+1 \\
a_{2}\left(b a_{i}-1\right)-\left(1-b \alpha_{2}\right) a_{i}= \pm 1, & a_{i}=\frac{a_{2} \pm 1}{2 b a_{2}-1}
\end{array}
$$

So the possible coices of $\alpha_{i}, i=3,4, \ldots$, depend on the magnitude of $b a_{2}$.
(i) For $b a_{2}<1 / 2$, we get the possibilities:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}-1}{1-2 b a_{2}}, & b_{i}=\frac{1-b-b a_{2}}{1-2 b a_{2}} ; \\
a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{1-2 b a_{2}} & b_{i}=\frac{1+b-b a_{2}}{1-2 b a_{2}} ; \\
a_{i}=a_{2}+1, & b_{i}=1-b-b a_{2} .
\end{array}
$$

(ii) For $1 / 2=b a_{2}$, we get only one possibility $a_{i}=a_{2}+1, \quad b_{i}=1-b-b a_{2}$.
(iii) For $1 / 2<b a_{2}<1$, we get the possibilities:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}-1}{2 b a_{2}-1}, & b_{i}=\frac{\left|1-b-b a_{2}\right|}{2 b a_{2}-1} \\
a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{2 b a_{2}-1}, & b_{i}=\frac{1+b-b a_{2}}{2 b a_{2}-1} \\
a_{i}=a_{2}+1, & b_{i}=\left|1-b-b a_{2}\right|
\end{array}
$$

The first and third lines in (3.2) lead to

$$
\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right)\left[\left(a_{2}+1\right) \pm\left(a_{2}-1\right)\right]=1-2 b a_{2} ;
$$

that is, either

$$
2 a_{2}\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right)=1-2 b a_{2} \text { or } 2 a_{2}\left(1-b a_{2}\right)=1
$$

which is impossible, since $\alpha_{2}>1$ and $1-b a_{2}>1 / 2$; or

$$
2\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right)=1-2 b a_{2} \text { or } b=1 / 2
$$

which violates the condition $b a_{2}<1 / 2$.
The second and third lines in (3.2) lead to

$$
\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left[1+b-b a_{2} \pm\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right)\right]=1-2 b a_{2}
$$

that is, either

$$
2\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left(1-b a_{2}\right)=1-2 b a_{2} \quad \text { or } \quad a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{1-2 b a_{2}}=\frac{1}{2\left(1-b a_{2}\right)}<1,
$$

contrary to hypothesis, or

$$
\begin{align*}
2 b\left(a_{2}+1\right) & =1-2 b a_{2}  \tag{3.3}\\
b & =\frac{1}{2\left(2 a_{2}+1\right)}
\end{align*}
$$

which yields the $4 \times 2$ matrix

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
1 & a & a+1 & 2 a+1  \tag{3.4}\\
\frac{1}{4 a+2} & \frac{3 a+2}{4 a+2} & \frac{3 a+1}{4 a+2} & \frac{3}{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where the parameter, $a$, is chosen $\geq 1$.
The first and second lines of (3.2) lead to

$$
\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right) \pm\left(a_{2}-1\right)\left(1+b-b a_{2}\right)= \pm\left(1-2 b a_{2}\right)^{2}
$$

which gives

$$
(2 b+1)\left(2 b a_{2}^{2}-2 a_{2}+1\right)=0 \text { or } 2\left(1-2 b a_{2}\right)=\left(1-2 b a_{2}\right)^{2}
$$

The first violates $2 b a_{2}<1$, and the second violates $2 b a_{2}>0$. Thus, (3.4) is the only matrix with $n>3$ for Case 2(i).

The second and third lines of (3.2)' lead to

$$
\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left[1+b-b a_{2} \pm\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right)\right]=2 b a_{2}-1
$$

Thus, either

$$
2\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left(1-b a_{2}\right)=2 b a_{2}-1, \quad b=\frac{2 a_{2}+3}{2 a_{2}\left(a_{2}+2\right)},
$$

or

$$
2 b\left(a_{2}+1\right)=2 b a_{2}-1
$$

which is impossible.
The first case leads to the matrix
(3.4') $\quad\left(\begin{array}{cccc}1 & a & a+1 & a+2 \\ \frac{2 a+3}{2 a(\alpha+2)} & \frac{1}{2 a(a+2)} & \frac{a+3}{2 a(\alpha+2)} & \frac{3}{2 a}\end{array}\right)$

This is the same as the matrix (3.4) in case $0<\alpha \leq 1$, after we renormalize by replacing $a$ by $1 / a$, multiplying the first row by $a$ and the second row by $1 / a$ and interchanging the first two columns.

The first and third lines of (3.2) lead to

$$
\left|1-b-b a_{2}\right|\left[\left(a_{2}+1\right) \pm\left(a_{2}-1\right)\right]=2 b a_{2}-1
$$

both of which lead to

$$
a_{i}=\frac{\left|1-b-b a_{2}\right|}{2 b a_{2}-1} \leq \frac{1}{2}<1
$$

contrary to hypothesis.
To consider the first and third lines we first note that the conditions $1-b-b a_{2}<0$, that is,

$$
b>1 /\left(1+a_{2}\right)
$$

and

$$
a_{i}=\left(a_{2}-1\right) /\left(2 b a_{2}-1\right) \geq a_{2} \geq 1
$$

and incompatible. Thus, we get

$$
\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right) \pm\left(a_{2}-1\right)\left(1+b-b a_{2}\right)=\left(2 b a_{2}-1\right)^{2}
$$

which leads either to

$$
2 a_{2}\left(1-b a_{2}\right)-2 b=\left(2 b a_{2}-1\right)^{2}
$$

and hence,

$$
2\left(1-b-b a_{2}\right) \leq\left(2 b a_{2}-1\right)^{2}, \quad a_{i} \leq \frac{1}{2}
$$

or to $a b_{2}=\frac{1}{2}$. Both cases are excluded.
Thus (3.4) is the only normalized $4 \times 2$ matrix in Case 2.
Case 3. $b_{2}=b a_{2}-1$. In this case, $b_{i}=b a_{i}-1$ for $a 11 i$ and the possibilities reduce to:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
a_{2}\left(b a_{i}-1\right)-a_{i}\left(b a_{2}-1\right)=1, & a_{i}=a_{2}+1 \\
a_{2}\left(b a_{i}-1\right)+a_{i}\left(b a_{2}-1\right)=1, & a_{i}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{2 b a_{2}-1} \tag{3.5}
\end{array}
$$

The two lines of (3.5) lead to

$$
\left(a_{2}+1\right)\left[\left(b a_{2}+b-1\right) \pm\left(-b a_{2}+b+1\right)\right]=2 b a_{2}-1
$$

The resulting equations are $2 b\left(a_{2}+1\right)=2 b a_{2}-1$, which is impossible, and

$$
b=\frac{2 \alpha_{2}+1}{2 \alpha_{2}^{2}}
$$

which makes

$$
a_{3}=\frac{a_{2}+1}{2 b a_{2}-1}=a_{2} .
$$

To sum up.
Theorem (3.6): There are no $5 \times 2$ permissible real matrices, and there is a one-parameter family of normalized permissible $4 \times 2$ matrices, given by (3.4).

We have limited the discussion to real matrices in order to reduce the number of cases. However, the family of permissible matrices (3.4) is valid for all fields of characteristic $\neq 2$ or 3 , as long as we exclude the values $a=0,-1 / 3,-1 / 2,-2 / 3$, and -1 .
4. PARAMETRIC SOLUTIONS OF (1.1) WITH THE USE OF ADMISSIBLE MATRICES

Theorem (4.1): Given an admissible matrix $\left(\begin{array}{lll}a_{1} & \cdots & a_{n} \\ b_{1} & \cdots & b_{n}\end{array}\right)$ then for any $a$, the

$$
x_{i}=a_{i}^{2} a-b_{i}^{2} ; \quad i=1,2, \ldots, n
$$

satisfy (1.1) with $y_{i j}=a_{i} a_{j} a \pm b_{i} b_{j}$.
Proof: For $1 \leq i<j \leq n$, we have

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{i} x_{j}+a & =\left(a_{i}^{2} a-b_{i}^{2}\right)\left(a_{j}^{2} a-b_{j}^{2}\right)+a  \tag{4.2}\\
& =a_{i}^{2} a_{j}^{2} a^{2}+\left(1-a_{i}^{2} b_{j}^{2}-a_{j}^{2} b_{i}^{2}\right) a^{2}+b_{i}^{2} b_{j}^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, since $a_{i} b_{j} \pm a_{j} b_{i}= \pm 1$, we have

$$
1-a_{i}^{2} b_{j}^{2}-a_{j}^{2} b_{i}^{2}= \pm 2 \alpha_{i} a_{j} b_{i} b_{j}
$$

Substituting in (4.2), we get

$$
x_{i} x_{j}+a=a_{i}^{2} a_{j}^{2} a^{2} \pm 2 a_{i} a_{j} b_{i} b_{j} a+b_{i}^{2} b_{j}^{2}=\left(a_{i} a_{j} a \pm b_{i} b_{j}\right)^{2}
$$

In view of (3.4), we get a two-parameter family of $4 \times 2$ admissible matrices,

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
s & s t & s(t+1) & s(2 t+1) \\
\frac{1}{2 s(2 t+1)} & \frac{3+2}{2 s(2 t+1)} & \frac{3+1}{2 s(2 t+1)} & \frac{3}{2 s}
\end{array}\right)
$$

which yield a corresponding three-parameter solution,

$$
x_{i}=x_{i}(s, t, \alpha), y_{i j}=y_{i j}(s, t, \alpha)
$$

of (1.1), which is linear in $a$. In general, $x_{3}$ and $x_{4}$ are algebraic, but not rational, functions of $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$.

## REFERENCE

1. Joseph Arkin, V. E. Hoggatt, Jr., \& E. G. Straus. "On Euler's Solution to a Problem of Diophantus." The Fibonacci Quarterly 17 (1979):333-339.
L. CARLITZ

Duke University, Durham, NC 27706

## 6. ZERO-ONE SEQUENCE ONCE MORE

1. Let $f(m, n, r, s)$ denote the number of zero-one sequences of length $m+n$ : (1.1)

$$
\sigma=\left(\alpha_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{m+n}\right) \quad(\alpha=0 \text { or } 1)
$$

with $m$ zeros, $n$ ones, $r$ occurrences of (00), and $s$ occurrences of (11). It is proved in [1] that

$$
f(m, n, r, s)=\left\{\begin{array}{cl}
\left(\begin{array}{c}
r
\end{array} c^{s}\right.  \tag{1.2}\\
-1 \\
r
\end{array}\right)\binom{n-1}{0} \quad(m-r=n-s \pm 1)
$$

The proof in [1] makes use of generating functions; we shall now give a combinatorial proof of (1.2).

Arrange the $m$ zeros and $n$ ones in the following way. We first place $m_{0}$ zeros on the extreme left, then $n_{1}$ ones, $m_{1}$ zeros, $n_{2}$ ones, $n_{2}$ zeros, ..., $n_{k}$ ones, $m_{k}$ zeros, where $k$ is some nonnegative integer,

$$
\begin{align*}
& m=m_{0}+m_{1}+\cdots+m_{k}, n=n_{1}+\cdots+n_{k}, \\
& m_{0} \geq 0, m \geq 0, m \geq 1 \quad(1 \leq i<k)  \tag{1.3}\\
& n_{1} \geq 0 \quad(1 \leq i \leq k)
\end{align*}
$$

and
where

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r=\sum_{i=0}^{k}\left(m_{i}-1\right)+\delta+\delta^{\prime}=m-k-1+\delta+\delta^{\prime}  \tag{1.4}\\
s=\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(n_{i}-1\right)=n-k,
\end{array}\right.
$$

教

$$
\begin{align*}
\delta & = \begin{cases}1 & \left(m_{0}=0\right) \\
0 & \left(m_{0}>0\right),\end{cases} \\
\delta^{\prime} & = \begin{cases}1 & \left(m_{k}=0\right) \\
0 & \left(m_{k}>0\right)\end{cases} \tag{1.5}
\end{align*}
$$

It follows from (1.3) and (1.4) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
r-s=m-n+\delta+\delta^{\prime}-1 . \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is now convenient to consider four cases:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { (i) } m_{0}=m_{k}=0 ; \\
& \text { (iii) } m_{0}>0, m_{k}=0 ; \text { (ii) } m_{0}=0, m_{k}>0 ; \\
& m_{0}>0, m_{k}>0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

The number of solutions of

$$
a=x_{1}+\cdots+x_{k}, x_{i}>0 \quad(i=1, \ldots, k)
$$

is equal to $\binom{a-1}{k-1}$.
Thus, the number of solutions

$$
\left(m_{0}, m_{1}, \ldots, m_{k} ; n_{1}, \ldots, n_{k}\right)
$$

of (1.3) is equal to:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \binom{m-1}{k-2}\binom{n-1}{k-1}=\binom{m-1}{r}\binom{n-1}{s} \quad(m-r=n-s-1)  \tag{i}\\
& \binom{m-1}{k-1}\binom{n-1}{k-1}=\binom{m-1}{r}\binom{n-1}{s} \quad(m-r=n-s)  \tag{ii}\\
& \binom{m-1}{k-1}\binom{n-1}{k-1}=\binom{m-1}{r}\binom{n-1}{s} \quad(m-r=n-s) \\
& \binom{m-1}{k}\binom{n-1}{k-1}=\binom{m-1}{r}\binom{n-1}{s} \quad(m-r=n-s+1) . \tag{iv}
\end{align*}
$$

The first part of (1.2) is implied by (ii) together with (iii), the second part by (i) and (iv). The last part of (1.2) is equivalent to the statement that $k$ cannot exist satisfying both parts of (1.4).

This evidently completes the proof of (1.2).
2. The above proof is applicable to a much more general problem. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\boldsymbol{r}=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}, r_{3}, \ldots\right), \quad \boldsymbol{s}=\left(s_{1}, s_{2}, s_{3}, \ldots\right) \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

be two sequences of nonnegative integers. We again consider zero-one sequences of length $m+n$ with $m$ zeros and $n$ ones. Let $f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s})$ denote the number of such sequences, where $r_{1}=m, s_{1}=n$, with $r_{i}$ blocks of zeros of length $i$ and $s_{i}$ blocks of ones of length $i$ for $i=2,3,4, \ldots$. Thus, $r_{1}$ can be thought of as the number of blocks of zeros of length one and $s_{1}$ the number of blocks of length one.

As in $\S l$, we envisage an arbitrary sequence $\sigma$ as broken into a block of zeros (possibly vacuous), a block of ones, a block of zeros, and so on. However, we shall now enumerate the blocks by their cardinality. If $k$ denotes the number of blocks of ones, then the number of blocks of zeros is either $k-1, k$, or $k+1$. Hence, we have the following relations,

$$
\begin{align*}
& r_{1}=k_{1}^{\prime}+2 k_{2}^{\prime}+3 k_{3}^{\prime}+\cdots \\
& r_{2}=k_{2}^{\prime}+2 k_{3}^{\prime}+3 k_{4}^{\prime}+\cdots  \tag{2.2}\\
& r_{3}=k_{3}^{\prime}+2 k_{4}^{\prime}+3 k_{5}^{\prime}+\cdots \\
& \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdots
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& s_{1}=k_{1}+2 k_{2}+3 k_{3}+\cdots  \tag{2.3}\\
& s_{2}=k_{2}+2 k_{3}+3 k_{4}+\cdots \\
& s_{3}=k_{3}+2 k_{4}+3 k_{5}+\cdots \\
& \cdots \cdots \cdots \cdot \cdots
\end{align*}
$$

together with

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
k^{\prime} & =k_{1}^{\prime}+k_{2}^{\prime}+k_{3}^{\prime}+\cdots  \tag{2.4}\\
k & =k_{1}+k_{2}+k_{3}+\cdots
\end{align*}\right.
$$

where $k^{\prime}=k-1, k$, or $k+1$.
The $k_{i}^{\prime}$ denote the multiplicity of blocks of zeros of length $i$, and the $k_{i}$ denote the multiplicity of blocks of ones of length $i$. Thus, the first of (2.2) enumerates the number of blocks of zeros of length one, that is, the total number of zeros. The second of (2.2) enumerates the number of blocks of zeros of length two, and so on. Similar remarks apply to (2.3) for the blocks of ones.

It is easily verified that (2.2) is equivalent to the system of equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& k_{1}^{\prime}=r_{1}-2 r_{2}+r_{3} \\
& k_{2}^{\prime}=r_{2}-2 r_{3}+r_{4}  \tag{2.5}\\
& k_{3}^{\prime}=r_{3}-2 r_{4}+r_{5} \\
& \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot
\end{align*}
$$

while (2.3) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{align*}
& k_{1}=s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3} \\
& k_{2}=s_{2}-2 s_{3}+s_{4}  \tag{2.6}\\
& k_{3}=s_{3}-2 s_{4}+s_{5}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus, the $r_{i}$ and $s_{i}$ must satisfy the following conditions, but are otherwise unrestricted.

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
r_{i}-2 r_{i+1}+r_{i+2} \geq 0  \tag{2.7}\\
s_{i}-2 s_{i+1}+s_{i+2} \geq 0
\end{array} \quad(i=1,2,3, \ldots)\right.
$$

It follows from (2.5), (2.6), and (2.4) that

$$
\left\{\begin{align*}
k^{\prime} & =r_{1}-r_{2}  \tag{2.8}\\
k & =s_{1}-s_{2}
\end{align*}\right.
$$

Clearly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s})=\frac{k^{\prime}!}{k_{1}^{\prime}!k_{2}^{\prime}!k_{3}!\prime \cdots} \cdot \frac{k!}{k_{1}!k_{2}!k_{3}!\cdots} \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

In terms of $r_{i}$ and $s_{i}$, this becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s}) & =\frac{\left(r_{1}-r_{2}\right)!}{\left(r_{1}-2 r_{2}+r_{3}\right)!\left(r_{2}-2 r_{3}+r_{4}\right)!\cdots}  \tag{2.10}\\
& \cdot \frac{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)!}{\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\left(s_{2}-2 s_{3}+s_{4}\right)!\ldots}
\end{align*}
$$

3. For applications, it is convenient to use generating functions. By the multinomial theorem, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{k_{1}+k_{2}+k_{3}+\cdots=k} \frac{k!}{k_{1}!k_{2}!k_{3}!\ldots} x_{1}^{k_{1}} x_{2}^{k_{2}} x_{3}^{k_{3}} \ldots=\left(x_{1}+x_{2}+x_{3}+\cdots\right)^{k}, \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where it is assumed that the series $x_{1}+x_{2}+x_{3}+\cdots$ is absolutely convergent. By (2.6), the left-hand side of (3.1) is equal to

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{\substack{\boldsymbol{s} \\
s_{1}-s_{2}=k}} \frac{k!}{\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\ldots} x_{1}^{s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}} x_{2}^{s_{2}-2 s_{3}+s_{4}} \ldots \\
= & \sum_{\substack{\boldsymbol{s} \\
s_{1}-s_{2}=k}} \frac{k!}{\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\left(s_{2}-2 s_{3}+s_{4}\right)!\ldots} x_{1}^{s_{1}}\left(x_{1}^{-2} x_{2}\right)^{s_{2}}\left(x_{1} x_{2}^{-2} x_{3}\right)^{s_{3}} \ldots .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, if we take

$$
\begin{aligned}
& x_{1}=y_{1} \\
& x_{2}=y_{1}^{2} y_{2} \\
& x_{3}=y_{1}^{3} y_{2}^{2} y_{3} \\
& x_{4}=y_{1}^{4} y_{2}^{3} y_{3}^{2} y_{4} \\
& \text {. . . . . . }
\end{aligned}
$$

(3.1) becomes
(3.2) $\left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+y_{1}^{3} y_{2}^{2} y_{3}+\cdots\right)^{k}$

As a first application of (3.2), we take $y_{3}=y_{4}=y_{5}=\cdots=1$. Then, the left-hand side of $(4.2)$ reduces to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+y_{1}^{3} y_{2}^{2}+\cdots\right)^{k} & =y_{1}^{k}\left(1-y_{1} y_{2}\right)^{-k} \\
& =\sum_{s=0}^{\infty}\binom{k+s-1}{s} y_{1}^{s+k_{2}} y_{2}^{s} \\
& =\sum_{s_{1}-s_{2}=k}\binom{s_{1}-1}{s_{2}} y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

in agreement with (1.2).
If we take $y_{3}=y_{4}=\cdots=0$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}\right)^{k} & =y_{1}^{k} \sum_{s=0}^{\infty}\binom{k}{s} y_{2}^{s} \\
& =\sum_{s_{1}-s_{2}=k}\binom{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{2}} y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, in this case, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(\mathfrak{r}, \mathfrak{s})=\binom{r_{1}-r_{2}}{r_{2}}\binom{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{2}} \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $r_{1}-r_{2}=k^{\prime}, s_{1}-s_{2}=k$, while

$$
r_{3}=r_{4}=\cdots=0, s_{3}=s_{4}=\cdots=0
$$

That is, (3.3) furnishes the enumerant when all blocks are of length one or two.
4. In (3.2), we now take

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{4}=y_{5}=y_{6}=\cdots=1 \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, the left-hand side of (3.2) becomes

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl} 
& \left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+y_{1}^{3} y_{2}^{2} y_{3}+y_{1}^{4} y_{2}^{3} y_{3}^{2}+\cdots\right)^{k} \\
= & y_{1}^{k}\left\{1+y_{1} y_{2}\left(1+y_{1} y_{2} y_{3}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}^{2} y_{3}^{2}+\cdots\right)\right\}^{k} \\
= & y_{1}^{k}\left\{1+\frac{y_{1} y_{2}}{1-y_{1} y_{2} y_{3}}\right\}^{k} \\
= & y_{1}^{k} \sum_{t=0}^{k} t\left(y_{1} y_{2}\right) \sum_{s=0}^{\infty}(t+s-1 \\
= & \sum_{s_{1}, s_{2}, s_{3}}\binom{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{2}-s_{3}}\left(y_{1} y_{2} y_{3}\right) \\
s_{1}-s_{3}=k
\end{array}\right) y_{1}^{s_{1} y_{2}^{s_{2}} y_{3}^{s_{3}}} .
$$

Hence, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s})=\binom{r_{1}-r_{2}}{r_{2}-r_{3}}\binom{r_{2}-1}{r_{3}}\binom{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{2}-s_{3}}\binom{s_{2}-1}{s_{3}} \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $r_{1}-r_{2}=k^{\prime}, s_{1}-s_{2}=k$.
Thus (4.2) furnishes the enumerant by blocks of length 1,2 , and 3. If, instead of (4.1), we take
(4.3)

$$
y_{4}=y_{5}=y_{6}=\cdots=0
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+y_{1}^{3} y_{2}^{2} y_{3}\right)^{k} & =\sum_{t_{1}+t_{2}+t_{3}=k} \frac{k!}{t_{1}!t_{2}!t_{3}!} y_{1}^{t_{1}+2 t_{2}+t_{3}} y_{2}^{t_{2}+2 t_{3}} y_{3}^{t_{3}} \\
& =\sum_{\substack{s_{1}, s_{2}, s_{3} \\
s_{1}-s_{2}=k}} \frac{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)!}{\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\left(s_{2}-2 s_{3}\right)!s_{3}!} y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}} y_{3}^{s_{3}}
\end{aligned}
$$

so that

$$
\begin{align*}
f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s}) & =\frac{\left(r_{1}-r_{2}\right)!}{\left(r_{1}-2 r_{2}+r_{3}\right)!\left(r_{2}-2 r_{3}\right)!r_{3}!}  \tag{4.4}\\
& \cdot \frac{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)!}{\left(s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3}\right)!\left(s_{2}-2 s_{3}\right)!s_{3}!},
\end{align*}
$$

the enumerant when all blocks are of length 1,2 , or 3 .
5. The general cases corresponding to (4.2) and (4.4) are now readily obtained. Let $p$ be a fixed positive integer, and take

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{p+1}=y_{p+2}=\cdots=1 \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
&\left\{y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+\cdots+y_{1}^{p-2} y_{2}^{p-3} \cdots y_{p-2}+\frac{y_{1}^{p-1} y_{2}^{p-2} \cdots y_{p-1}}{1-y_{1} y_{2} \cdots y_{p}}\right\}^{k}  \tag{5.2}\\
&= \sum_{t_{1}+\cdots+t_{p-1}=k}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p-1}\right) y_{1}^{t_{1}^{\prime}} y_{2}^{t_{2}^{\prime}} \\
& \cdots y_{p-1}^{t_{p-1}^{\prime}} \sum_{s=0}^{\infty}\binom{t_{p-1}+s-1}{s}\left(y_{1} y_{2} \cdots y_{p}\right)^{s},
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p-1}\right)=\frac{\left(t_{1}+t_{2}+\cdots+t_{p-1}\right)!}{t_{1}!t_{2}!\cdots t_{p-1}!}
$$

and

Put

$$
t_{i}^{\prime}+s=s_{i} \quad(1 \leq i<p), \quad s=s_{p}
$$

It follows that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
t_{p-1}=s_{p-1}-s_{p}  \tag{5.3}\\
t_{p-2}=s_{p-2}-2 s_{p-1}+s_{p} \\
t_{p-3}=s_{p-3}-2 s_{p-2}+s_{p-1} \\
\cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \\
t_{1}=s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3} \cdot
\end{array}\right.
$$

Hence, the coefficient of $y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}} \ldots y_{p}^{s_{p}}$ in (5.2) is equal to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p-1}\right)\left(s_{p-1}-1\right) \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p-1}$ are given by (5.3).
The enumerant $f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s})$ is therefore equal to (5.4) times the corresponding factor containing the $r_{i}$.

Corresponding to

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{p+1}=y_{p-2}=\cdots=0 \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have

$$
\left(y_{1}+y_{1}^{2} y_{2}+\cdots+y_{1}^{p} y_{2}^{p-1} \cdots y_{p}\right)^{k}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
=\sum_{t_{1}+\cdots+t_{p}=k}\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p}\right) y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}} \ldots y_{p}^{s_{p}} \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where now

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
t_{1}+2 t_{2}+3 t_{3}+\cdots+p t_{p} & =s_{1} \\
t_{2}+2 t_{3}+3 t_{4}+\cdots+(p-1) t_{p} & =s_{2} \\
\cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot & =\cdot \\
t_{p-1}+2 t_{p} & =s_{p-1} \\
t_{p} & =s_{p}
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

This gives

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
t_{p}=s_{p}  \tag{5.7}\\
t_{p-1}=s_{p-1}-2 s_{p} \\
t_{p-2}=s_{p-2}-2 s_{p-1}+s_{p} \\
t_{p-3}=s_{p-3}-2 s_{p-2}+s_{p-1} \\
\cdot \cdot \cdot \cdot \cdots \cdot \cdots \cdot \cdots \cdot \\
t_{1}=s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3} .
\end{array}\right.
$$

Hence, the coefficient of $y_{1}^{s_{1}} y_{2}^{s_{2}} \ldots y_{p}^{s_{p}}$ is the multinomial coefficient $\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, \ldots, t_{p}\right)$, with the $t_{i}$ determined by (5.7). The enumerant $f(\boldsymbol{r}, \boldsymbol{s})$ is the product of this coefficient times the corresponding factor containing the $r_{i}$.
6. Some curious combinatorial identities are implied by the above results. To illustrate with a simple case, we return to §3. It follows from (3.1) that, for $s_{1}>s_{2}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, t_{3}, \ldots\right)=\binom{s_{1}-1}{s_{2}} \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
t_{i}=s_{i}-2 s_{i+1}+s_{i+2} \quad(i=1,2,3, \ldots)
$$

and the summation is over all $s_{3}, s_{4}, s_{5}, \ldots$.
Similarly, from the proof of (4.2), we have, for

$$
\begin{align*}
s_{1}-2 s_{2}+s_{3} & \geq 0, s_{2}>s_{3} \\
\sum\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, t_{3}, \ldots\right) & =\binom{s_{1}-s_{2}}{s_{2}-s_{3}}\binom{s_{2}-1}{s_{3}}, \tag{6.2}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
t_{i}=s_{i}-2 s_{i+1}+s_{i+2} \quad(i=1,2,3, \ldots)
$$

and the summation is over all $s_{4}, s_{5}, s_{6}, \ldots$.
The general case implied by (5.2) and (5.4) is readily stated. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum\left(t_{1}, t_{2}, t_{3}, \ldots\right)=\left(\bar{t}_{1}, \bar{t}_{2}, \ldots, \bar{t}_{p-1}\right)\binom{s_{p-1}-1}{s_{p}} \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& t_{i}=s_{i}-2 s_{i+1}+s_{i+2} \quad(i=1,2,3, \ldots) \\
& \bar{t}_{i}=t_{i} \quad(i=1, \ldots, p-2), \quad \bar{t}_{p-1}=s_{p-1}-s_{p}
\end{aligned}
$$

and the summation on the left of (6.3) is over all $s_{p+1}, s_{p+2}, s_{p+3}, \ldots$.

There are various other possibilities; for example, taking $y=1$ in (3.2). However, we leave this for another occasion.

REFERENCE

1. L. Carlitz. "Fibonacci Notes: 5. Zero-One Sequences Again." The Fibonacei Quarterly 15 (1977):49-56.

THE FIBONACCI ASSOCIATION

PROUDLY ANNOUNCES
THE
PUBLICATION OF

A COLLECTION OF MANUSCRIPTS RELATED TO THE FIBONACCI SEQUENCE
18TH ANNIVERSARY VOLUME

Edited by
VERNER E. HOGGATT, JR.
and
MARJORIE BICKNELL-JOHNSON

*     * 

This volume, in celebration of the 18 th anniversary of the founding of The Fibonacci Association, contains a collection of manuscripts, published here for the first time, that reflect research efforts of an international range of mathematicians. This 234-page volume is now available for $\$ 20.00^{*}$ a copy, postage and handling included. Please make checks payable to The Fibonacci Association, and send your requests to The Fibonacci Association, University of Santa Clara, Santa Clara, California 95053.
*For areas within domestic U.S. mail limits. Please write for applicable rates to areas outside the U.S.

# ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS 

Edited by

A. P. HILLMAN

University of New Mexico, Albuquerque, New Mexico 87131
Send all communications regarding ELEMENTARY PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS to PROFESSOR A.P. HILLMAN, 709 Solano Dr., S.E., Albuquerque, New Mexico 87108. Each solution or problem should be on a separate sheet (or sheets). Preference will be given to those typed with double spacing in the format used below. Solutions should be received within 4 months of the publication date.

## DEFINITIONS

The Fibonacci numbers $F_{n}$ and Lucas numbers $L_{n}$ satisfy $F_{n+2}=F_{n+1}+F_{n}$, $F_{0}=0, F_{1}=1$ and $L_{n+2}=L_{n+1}+L_{n}, L_{0}=2, L_{1}=1$. Also $a$ and $b$ designate the roots $(1+\sqrt{5}) / 2$ and $(1-\sqrt{5}) / 2$, respectively, of $x^{2}-x-1=0$.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE
B-424 Proposed by Richard M. Grassl, University of New Mexico
Of the $\binom{52}{5}$ possible 5 -card poker hands, how many form $a$ :
(i) full house?
(ii) flush?
(iii) straight?

B-425 Proposed by Richard M. Grassl, University of New Mexico
Let $k$ and $n$ be positive integers with $k<n$ and let $S$ consist of all $k-$ tuples $X=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{k}\right)$ with each $x_{j}$ an integer and

$$
1 \leq x_{1}<x_{2}<\cdots<x_{k} \leq n
$$

For $j=1,2, \ldots, k$, find the average value $\bar{x}_{j}$ of $x_{j}$ over all $X$ in $S$.
B-426 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA
Is $\left(F_{n} F_{n+3}\right)^{2}+\left(2 F_{n+1} F_{n+2}\right)^{2}$ a perfect square for all positive integers $n$, i.e., are there integers $c_{n}$ such that $\left(F_{n} F_{n+3}, 2 F_{n+1} F_{n+2}, c_{n}\right)$ is always a Pythagorean triple?

B-427 Proposed by Phil Mana, Albuquerque, $N M$
Establish a closed form for $\sum_{k=1}^{n} k\binom{k}{2}\binom{n-k}{3}$.
B-428 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA
For odd positive integers $w$, establish a closed form for

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{2 s+1}\binom{2 s+1}{k} F_{n+k w}^{2}
$$

B-429 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA
Is the function

$$
F_{n+10 r}^{4}+F_{n}^{4}-\left(L_{8 r}+L_{4 r}-1\right)\left(F_{n+8 r}^{4}+F_{n+2 r}^{4}\right)+\left(L_{12 r}-L_{8 r}+2\right)\left(F_{n+6 r}^{4}+F_{n+4 r}^{4}\right)
$$

independent of $n$ ? Here $n$ and $r$ are integers.
SOLUTIONS
Multiples of Some Triangular Numbers
B-400 Proposed by Herta T. Freitag, Roanoke, VA
Let $T_{n}$ be the $n$th triangular number $n(n+1) / 2$. For which positive integers $n$ is $T_{1}^{2}+T_{2}^{2}+T_{3}^{2}+\cdots+T_{n}^{2}$ an integral multiple of $T_{n}$ ?

Solution by C. C. Thompson, Roanoke, VA
Let $S=\sum_{k=1}^{n} T_{n}^{2}$, where $n$ is a positive integer; then $S$ is an integral multiple of $T_{n}$ iff $n \doteq 1,7,13(\bmod 15)$. To see this, use the formulas for sums of powers of the first $n$ positive integers (or the method of differences) and a bit of manipulative algebra to get

$$
S=T_{n} \cdot\left(3 n^{3}+12 n^{2}+13 n+2\right) / 30
$$

From this, the sum $S$ is an integral multiple of $T_{n}$ iff

$$
f(n)=3 n^{3}+12 n^{2}+13 n+2 \equiv 0(\bmod 2 \cdot 3 \cdot 5)
$$

Now $f(n) \equiv n^{3}+n \equiv n(n+1)^{2} \equiv 0(\bmod 2)$ is satisfied by any positive integer; $f(n) \equiv n+2 \equiv 0(\bmod 3)$ has $n \equiv 1(\bmod 3)$ as its only solution; $f(n) \equiv$ $(3 n+2)\left(n^{2}+1\right) \equiv 0(\bmod 5)$ has $n \equiv 1,2,3(\bmod 5)$ as solutions. From this, $f(n) \equiv 0(\bmod 30)$ has the solutions $n \equiv 1,7,13(\bmod 15)$.
Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, Edilio A. Escalona Fernández, Bob Prielipp, Sahib Singh, M. Wachtel (Switzerland), Jonathan Weitsman, Gregory Wulczyn, and the proposer.

```
Change of Pace for F.Q.
```

B-401 Proposed by Gary L. Mullen, Pennsylvania State University
Show that $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left[(n!)^{2 n} /\left(n^{2}\right)!\right]=0$.
Solution by Edilio A. Escalona Fernández, Caracas, Venezuela
Let's call $R_{n}=(n!)^{2 n} /\left(n^{2}\right)!$, and $T_{n}=\operatorname{Ln}\left(R_{n}\right)$. Then,

$$
T_{n}=2 n \operatorname{Ln}(n!)-\operatorname{Ln}\left(\left(n^{2}\right)!\right)
$$

so that by applying the formula $\operatorname{Ln}(n!)=n \operatorname{Ln}(n)-n+0(\operatorname{Ln}(n))$, we have

$$
T_{n}=-n^{2}+2 n 0(\operatorname{Ln}(n))+0(\operatorname{Ln}(n))=-n^{2}+0(n \operatorname{Ln}(n))
$$

and this means that $T_{n} \rightarrow-\infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$; hence, by continuity of $\exp (x)$ :

$$
\exp \left(T_{n}\right)=R_{n} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, M. Wachtel (Switzerland), Jonathan Weitsman, Gregory Wulczyn, and the proposer.

```
    Pythagorean Triple
B-402 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA
    Show that ( }\mp@subsup{L}{n}{}\mp@subsup{L}{n+3}{\prime},2\mp@subsup{L}{n+1}{}\mp@subsup{L}{n+2}{\prime},5\mp@subsup{F}{2n+3}{}) is a Pythagorean triple.
Solution by Sahib Singh, Clarion College, Clarion, PA
Let \(A=L_{n+2}, B=L_{n+1}\), then
\[
\begin{aligned}
& A^{2}-B^{2}=\left(L_{n+2}-L_{n+1}\right)\left(L_{n+2}+L_{n+1}\right)=L_{n} L_{n+3} . \\
& A^{2}+B^{2}=L_{n+2}^{2}+L_{n+1}^{2}=5\left(F_{n+2}^{2}+F_{n+1}^{2}\right)=5 F_{2 n+3} .
\end{aligned}
\]
```

Thus, the given triple is $A^{2}-B^{2}, 2 A B, A^{2}+B^{2}$, which is Pythagorean.
Also solved by PaulS. Bruckman, Herta T. Freitag, Graham Lord, John W. Milsom, Bob Prielipp, and the proposer.

## Lucas Congruence

B-403 Proposed by Gregory Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA
Let $m=5^{n}$. Show that $L_{2 m} \equiv-2\left(\bmod 5 m^{2}\right)$.
Solution by Graham Lord, Université Laval, Québec;
Bob Prielipp, University of Wisconsin-Oshkosh; and
Sahib Singh, Clarion College, Clarion, Pa (independently)
It is known that $m \mid F_{m}$. [See B-248, vol. 11 (1973):553.] Hence,

$$
\left(5 m^{2}\right) \mid\left(5 F_{m}^{2}\right)
$$

Since $m$ is odd, we also have $L_{2 m}=5 F_{m}^{2}-2$, and it follows that

$$
L_{2 m} \equiv-2\left(\bmod 5 m^{2}\right) .
$$

Also solved by Paul S. Bruckman, Lawrence Somer, and the proposer.

## Golden Approximations

B-404 Proposed by Phil Mana, Albuquerque, NM
Let $x$ be a positive irrational number. Let $a, b, c$, and $d$ be positive integers with $a / b<x<c / d$. If $a / b<r<x$, with $r$ rational, implies that the denominator of $r$ exceeds $b$, we call $\alpha / b$ a good lower approximation (GLA) for $x$. If $x<r<c / d$, with $r$ rational, implies that the denominator of $r$ exceeds $d, c / d$ is a good upper approximation (GUA) for $x$. Find all the GLAs and all the GUAs for $(1+\sqrt{5}) / 2$.
Solution by Paul S. Bruckman, Concord, CA
Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n}=F_{2 n} / F_{2 n-1}, y_{n}=F_{2 n+1} / F_{2 n}, n=1,2,3, \ldots ; \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

1et

$$
\begin{equation*}
X=\left(x_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty}, Y=\left(y_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{\infty} . \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is well known that $X$ and $Y$ provide the convergents for the continued fraction of $\alpha$, and moreover:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1=x_{1}<x_{2}<\cdots<x_{n}<\cdots a<y_{n}<\cdots<y_{2}<y_{1}=2 . \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $L$ and $U$ denote the set of GLAs and GUAs，respectively，for $\alpha$ ．We will prove that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L=X, U=Y \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will use the following result，readily proved by applying the Binét defi－ nitions：

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{2 n+2} F_{2 n-1}-F_{2 n} F_{2 n+1}=1 \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof of（4）：Given any positive integer $n$ ，and any rational $r=u / v$ ，such that $x_{n}<r \leq x_{n+1}$ ，then，$x_{n+1}-x_{n} \geq r-x_{n}>0$ ，i．e．，

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{F_{2 n+2}}{F_{2 n+1}}-\frac{F_{2 n}}{F_{2 n-1}} & \geq \frac{u}{v}-\frac{F_{2 n}}{F_{2 n-1}}>0 \\
\Rightarrow v\left(F_{2 n+2} F_{2 n-1}-F_{2 n} F_{2 n+1}\right) & \geq F_{2 n+1}\left(u F_{2 n-1}-v F_{2 n}\right)>0
\end{aligned}
$$

But，since $u / v>F_{2 n} / F_{2 n-1}$ ，thus $u F_{2 n-1}-v F_{2 n} \geq 1$ ；using（5），this implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
v \geq F_{2 n+1^{\circ}} \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $F_{2 n-1}<F_{2 n+1}$ ，thus $v>F_{2 n-1}$ ，which implies that $x_{n} \varepsilon L$ ．Hence，
$X \subseteq L$.
Conversely，suppose $r=u / v \in L$ ．Then，for some $n, x_{n}<r \leq x_{n+1}$ ，which again implies（6），as above．Assume that $r<x_{n+1}$ ．Then，by definition of $L$ ， $v<F_{2 n+1}$ ，which contradicts（6）．It follows that $r=x_{n+1} \Rightarrow r \varepsilon X$ ．Hence， $L \subseteq X$.
Combining（7）and（8）implies $L=X$ ．Proceeding in a totally analogous manner，we may likewise prove that $U=Y$ ．

Also solved by Sahib Singh，Gregory Wulczyn，and the proposer．

## Good Rational Approximations

B－405 Proposed by Phil Mana，Albuquerque，NM
Prove that for every positive irrational $x$ ，the GLAs and GUAs for $x$（as defined in $B-404$ ）can be put together to form one sequence $\left\{p_{n} / q_{n}\right\}$ with

$$
p_{n+1} q_{n}-p_{n} q_{n+1}= \pm 1 \text { for all } n
$$

Solution by the proposer．
Let $p=[x]$ ，the greatest integer in $x$ ．Clearly $p$ is a GLA and $p+1$ is a GUA．So we let $p_{1}=p, q_{1}=1=q_{2}$ ，and $p_{2}=p+1$ ．Then we assume induc－ tively that $p_{n}$ and $q_{n}$ have been defined for $n=1,2, \ldots, k$ ．Let $s$ be the largest such $n$ for which $p_{n} / q_{n}$ is a GLA and $t$ be the largest such $n$ for which $p_{n} / q_{n}$ is a GUA；then define $p_{n+1}=p_{s}+p_{t}$ and $q_{n+1}=q_{s}+q_{t}$ ．This defines $p_{n}$ and $q_{n}$ for all positive integers $n$ and we let $r=p_{n} / q_{n}$ ．It follows from the theory of Farey sequences［see Ivan Niven \＆Herbert S．Zuckerman，An In－ troduction to the Theory of Numbers（New York：Wiley，1960），pp．128－133） that the $r_{n}$ give us all the GLAs and GUAs and that $p_{n+1} q_{n}-p_{n} q_{n+1}= \pm 1$ ．
Also solved by Paul S．Bruckman and Sahib Singh．

# ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS 

Edited by
RAYMOND E. WHITNEY
Lock Haven State College, Lock Haven, PA 17745

Send all communications concerning ADVANCED PROBLEMS AND SOLUTIONS to RAYMOND E. WHITNEY, Mathematics Department, Lock Haven State College, Lock Haven, PA 17745. This department especially welcomes problems believed to be new or extending old results. Proposers should submit solutions or other information that will assist the editor. To facilitate their consideration, solutions should be submitted on separate signed sheets within 2 months after publication of the problems.

PROBLEMS PROPOSED IN THIS ISSUE
H-313 Proposed by V.E. Hoggatt, Jr., San Jose State University, San Jose, CA
A. Show that the Fibonacci numbers partition the Fibonacci numbers.
B. Show that the Lucas numbers partition the Fibonacci numbers. (See "Additive Partitions I," FQJ, April 1977, p. 166.)
H-314 Proposed by P. Bruckman, Concord, CA
Given $x_{0} \in(-1,0)$, define the sequence $S=\left(x_{n}\right)_{n=0}^{\infty}$ as follows:

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n+1}=1+(-1)^{n} \sqrt{1+x_{n}}, n=0,1,2, \ldots \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Find the limit point(s) of $S$, if any exist.
H-315 Proposed by D. P. Laurie, National Research Institute for Mathematical Sciences, Pretoria, South Africa

Let the polynomial $P$ be given by

$$
P(z)=z_{n}+a_{n-1} z^{n-1}+a_{n-2} z^{n-2}+\cdots+a_{1} z+a_{0}
$$

and let ${\underset{Z}{1}}, \mathcal{Z}_{2}, \ldots, z_{n}$ be distinct complex numbers. The following iteration scheme for factorizing $P$ has been suggested by Kerner [1]:

$$
\hat{z}_{i}=z_{i}-\frac{P\left(z_{i}\right)}{\sum_{\substack{j=1 \\ j \neq i}}^{n}\left(z_{i}-z_{j}\right)} ; \quad i=1,2, \ldots, n
$$

Prove that if $\sum_{i=1}^{n} z_{i}=-a_{n-1}$, then also $\sum_{i=1}^{n} \hat{z}_{i}=-a_{n-1}$.

## REFERENCE

1. I. Kerner. "Ein Gesamtschrittverfahren zur Berechnung der Nullstellen von Polynomen." Numer. Math. 8 (1966):290-294.
H-316 Proposed by B. R. Myers, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada

The enumerator of compositions with exactly $k$ parts is $\left(x+x^{2}+\cdots\right)^{k}$, so that

$$
\begin{equation*}
[W(x)]^{k}=\left(w_{1} x+w_{2} x^{2}+\cdots\right)^{k} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

is then the enumerator of weighted $k$-part compositions. After Hoggatt \& Lind ("Compositions and Fibonacci Numbers," The Fibonacci Quarterly 7 (1969):253266), the number of weighted compositions of $n$ can be expressed in the form,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n}(w)=\sum_{r(n)} w_{a_{1}} \cdots w_{a_{k}} \quad(n>0), \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $w=\left\{w_{1}, w_{2}, \ldots\right\}$ and where the sum is over all compositions $\alpha_{1}+\ldots+$ $\alpha_{k}$ of $n$ (k variable). In particular (ibid.),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\gamma(n)} a_{1} \ldots a_{k}=F_{2 n}(1,1), \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F_{k}(p, q)$ is the $k$ th number in the Fibonacci sequence

$$
\begin{align*}
F_{1}(p, q) & =p \quad(\geq 0) \\
F_{2}(p, q) & =q \quad(\geq p)  \tag{4}\\
F_{n+2}(p, q) & =F_{n+1}(p, q)+F_{n}(p, q) \quad(n \geq 1) .
\end{align*}
$$

Show that
and, hence, that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\gamma(n)}\left(\alpha_{1} \pm 1\right) \alpha_{1} \ldots \alpha_{k}=2\left[F_{2 n \pm 1}(1,1)-1\right] \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{\gamma(n)}\left(a_{1}-1\right) \alpha_{1} \ldots \alpha_{k}+\sum_{\gamma(n)} \alpha_{1} \ldots \alpha_{k}=F_{2 n}(1,1+2 m)-2 m \quad(m \geq 0) . \tag{6}
\end{equation*}
$$

## SOLUTIONS

Umbral-a
H-285 Proposed by G. Wulczyn, Bucknell University, Lewisburg, PA (A generalization of R.G. Buschman's H-18) (Vol. 16, No. 2, April 1978)

Show that
(a)

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k} F_{r k} L_{n r-r k}=2^{n} F_{r n} \text { or } \quad\left(F^{r}+L^{r}\right)^{n} \doteq\left(2 F^{r}\right)^{n}
$$

Solution by L. Carlitz, Duke University, Durham, NC
Much more can be proved readily. Let $C(n, k), 0 \leq k \leq n$, be numbers that satisfy the symmetry condition:

$$
C(n, k)=C(n, n-k) \quad(0 \leq k \leq n) .
$$

Let $a, b$ be arbitrary, and define

$$
F_{n}=\frac{a^{n}-b^{n}}{a-b}, \quad L_{n}=a^{n}+b^{n}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k) F_{r k} L_{r n-r k}=\frac{1}{a-b} \sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k)\left(a^{r k}-b^{r k}\right)\left(a^{r n-r k}+b^{r n-r k}\right) \\
= & \frac{1}{a-b} \sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k)\left(a^{r n}-b^{r n}\right)+\frac{1}{a-b} \sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k)\left(a^{r k} b^{r n-r k}-a^{r n-r k} b^{r k}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k) a^{r n-r k} b^{r k}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, n-k) a^{r k} b^{r n-r k}=\sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k) a^{r k} b^{r n-r k}
$$

it follows that

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k)\left(a^{r k} b^{r n-r k}-a^{r n-r k} b^{r k}\right)=0
$$

Therefore
(*)

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k) F_{r k} L_{r n-r k}=F_{r n} \sum_{k=0}^{n} C(n, k)
$$

For example, if $C(n, k)=\binom{n}{k}$, we get

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k} F_{r k} L_{r n-r k}=2 F_{r n}
$$

while, if $C(n, k)=\binom{n}{k}^{2}$, we have

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n}\binom{n}{k}^{2} F_{r k} L_{r n-r k}=\binom{2 n}{n} F_{r n} .
$$

To take a less obvious example, let $A_{n, k}$ denote the Eulerian number defined by

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} k^{n} x^{k}=\frac{A_{n}(x)}{(1-x)^{n+1}} ; A_{n}(x)=\sum_{k=1}^{n} A_{n, k} x^{k} \quad(n \geq 1)
$$

It is well known that

$$
A_{n, k}=A_{n, n-k} \quad(1 \leq k \leq n)
$$

and

$$
\sum_{k=1}^{n} A_{n, k}=n!
$$

Take
so that

$$
C(n, k)=A_{n+1, k+1} \quad(0 \leq k \leq n),
$$

$$
C(n, k)=C(n, n-k) \quad(0 \leq k \leq n)
$$

It follows that

$$
\sum_{k=0}^{n} A_{n+1, k+1} F_{r k} L_{r n-r k}=(n+1)!F_{r n}
$$

Also solved by P. Bruckman, J. Vogel, and the proposer.
LATE ACKNOWLEDGMENTS:
H-281, also solved by J. Shallit.
H-283, also solved by A. Shannon, A. Philippou, and P. Yff.


[^0]:    *Supported by a University of Evansville Alumni Research Fellowship.

[^1]:    ＊This author＇s research was supported in part by National Science Foun－ dation Grant No．MCS 77－01780．

